



CITIZEN INFORMED CUSTODIAL DESIGN: AN EXPLORATION THROUGH DESIGN AND PRACTICE

By Kevin Bradley

Architect - NSW Reg. 8916

B.Arts Architecture (UTS). M.Arch (UTS). M.Des Science (Syd)

Submitted for the degree of
Doctor of Philosophy

Under the supervision of:

Dr Rohan Lulham

Dr Michael Er

School of Built Environment
Faculty of Design, Architecture and Building
University of Technology Sydney

October 2021

Certificate of Original Authorship

I, Kevin Bradley declare that this thesis, is submitted in fulfilment of the requirements for the award of Doctor of Philosophy in the School of Design, Design Architecture Building Faculty at the University of Technology Sydney.

This thesis is wholly my own work unless otherwise referenced or acknowledged. In addition, I certify that all information sources and literature used are indicated in the thesis.

This document has not been submitted for qualifications at any other academic institution.

This research is supported by the Australian Government Research Training Program.

Signature: Production Note:
 Signature removed prior to publication.

Date: 11 October 2021

Keywords

Architecture

Composite Descriptions

Constructionism

Custodial

Design

Design Oriented Scenarios

Lived experience

Penal

Phenomenology

Practice-led

Prison

Scripts

Significant Statements

Abstract

In many places around the world, prisons are places of mass incarceration (Crook 2017b). It has been argued that the nature of a society can be judged on how it treats its criminals (Dostoyevski 1911, p. 229). Wener argues that 'prisons are the physical manifestation of a society's goals and approaches for dealing with convicted men and women, and is a stage for acting out plans and programs for their future' (Wener 2012, p. 7). The contemporary prison in many liberal democracies is described as 'warehouses' suggesting voluminous spaces of opaque penal practices under the mandate of justice agencies (Garland 1990, p. 30). Others describe the modern prison as 'non-places' for 'non-people' (Jewkes, Slee & Moran 2017). The opaque penal practice extends to commissioning the design of prisons (Consoli 2012) and there is a sense of an inevitable trajectory for increasing segregation of the warehoused prisoner and the rest of society in the outside world (Bauman 2000).

I am a registered architect and having practiced design and research in prison environments for 10 years with Designing Out Crime University of Technology Sydney Australia, an emergent unease led to questioning whether the path we are taking as a society is in fact the one that we desire. My concern is whether there was, or could be, an alternative viewpoint that would inform prison architecture and how it could manifest in practice. This practice-led thesis is a vehicle to explore an alternative design and practice approach to prison architecture. It offers new design knowledge about prison design through a particular lens and a model for future architectural practice.

This thesis takes a constructionist epistemology to develop knowledge and, a phenomenological perspective across a diverse demographic of stakeholders in prison environments to receive knowledge. Conducted across three prisons and with external participation (all within the state of New South Wales, Australia), the research develops a collective description of concerns pertaining to the topic of 'citizenship' and 'justice' and its meaning in the custodial built environment. The research employs phenomenological methods and a descriptive mechanism called 'scripts' that articulate the collective concerns of the stakeholders. It then employs a practice mechanism, 'design scenarios' to evoke a vision of the concerns as they relate to prison environments. Combined, the scripts and design scenarios that address the meaning of citizenship in prison environments are a contribution to custodial design specific to this thesis. The research design employed through the research is formalised into a practice model and presented as a second contribution of the thesis to architectural practice at the completion of the thesis.

The "Embedded Social Knowledge Model" (ESK) is the second contribution of this thesis as it contributes to custodial design practice knowledge. The ESK model

centers the lived-experience voice as a driver of conceptualising environments. It has the capacity to respond to collective concerns from a diverse participant cohort on an array of issues. The model offers a trajectory into future design practice beyond this immediate PhD study. Its potential lies in its capacity to bring into the center of the design process the voices that are often cast to the periphery by an architectural design procurement processes (Farrely 2021).

Table of Contents Certificate of Original Authorship.....	i
Keywords	ii
Abstract.....	iii
List of Figures.....	viii
List of Tables	x
List of Abbreviations and Terms	xi
Acknowledgement Traditional Owners and Land.....	xii
Acknowledgements.....	xiii
Chapter 1: Introduction – The Research.....	15
1.1 Foreground	15
1.2 Research Objective	18
1.3 Thesis Aims and Concerns.....	18
1.4 Moral and The Ethical: Why Prison Research?.....	19
1.5 Research Origins	22
1.6 Chapter Outline.....	23
1.7 Theory. People. Practice. Seeing The World	24
1.7.1 Theory.....	25
1.7.2 People.....	26
1.7.3 Tribes.....	27
1.7.4 Theory in Practice. Practice in Theory.....	29
1.7.5 Seeing the World	30
1.8 Design Practice	31
1.9 Locating the research in a literary and practice landscape.....	32
1.9.1 Research Orientation to Literature and Practice	32
1.9.2 International	34
1.9.3 Local	42
1.9.4 Architecture	43
1.9.5 Non-Architecture	51
1.10 Conclusion	54
Chapter 2: Research Design	57
2.1 The Design.....	57
2.1.1 Introduction.....	57
2.1.2 Epistemology: (Social) Constructionism.....	58
2.1.3 Theoretical Perspective: Interpretivism — Phenomenology.....	60
2.1.4 Methodology: Phenomenological + Visual	62
2.1.5 Four Part Method: Interpretive Enquiry, Design, Sharing, Discussing	65
2.1.6 The Research Model	70
2.2 The Research Components	71
2.2.1 The Practice and PhD Program.....	71
2.2.2 Research Management	72
2.2.3 Ethics	74
Chapter 3: Qualitative – Phenomenological Study	75
3.1 The Study Introduction.....	75
3.1.1 Study Aim	75
3.1.2 Interviews.....	75
3.1.3 Transcript and Coding Significant Statements.....	80

3.1.4 A Note to Reading Significant Statements and Composite Descriptions.....	81
3.2 Significant statements.....	82
3.2.1 Overview of the Statements.....	82
3.2.2 Social Citizenship	84
3.2.3 Justice	103
3.2.4 Architecture	105
3.3 Composite Descriptions – The ‘Essence’	114
3.3.1 Introduction	114
3.3.2 Social Citizenship	116
3.3.3 Justice	121
3.3.4 Architecture	123
3.4 Scripts: the ‘design attractors’	129
3.4.1 Introduction	129
3.4.2 Social Citizenship Scripts.....	132
3.4.3 Justice Scripts	136
3.4.4 Architecture Scripts.....	139
3.4.5 Script Summary and Design Context	142
Chapter 4: Practice - Design Study.....	145
4.1 Design Oriented Scenarios.....	145
4.1.1 Public Entry and Visits.....	147
4.1.2 Being Productive	154
4.1.3 Prison as a Contemporary Symbol of Civic Duty.....	159
4.1.4 A Way in and a Path Out.	161
4.1.5 Combined Design Impact Visualisations.....	164
Chapter 5: The Exhibition	165
5.1 Introduction.....	165
5.2 Exhibition Management	165
5.3 Response + Outcomes.....	167
5.3.1 Response	167
5.4 Discussion	171
5.4.1 Tinsel on the Razor Tape.....	171
5.4.2 Search for The Horse That’s Bolted.....	173
Chapter 6: Design and Practice: Discussions.....	177
6.1 Introduction.....	177
6.2 Custodial Design + Practice.....	178
6.2.1 Assumptions.....	178
6.2.2 Transitions of Perspective: From Research to Practice.....	179
6.2.3 Model of Embedded Social Knowledge to Inform Custodial Design	183
6.2.4 Locating the Contribution Back into Practice.....	185
6.2.5 Limitations and Opportunities.....	186
Chapter 7: Closure and Onwards to Practice	191
7.1 Closure.....	191
7.2 Contributions.....	191
7.2.1 Design	192
7.2.2 Practice	194
7.3 Onwards to Practice	199
Bibliography	201

Appendices207

List of Figures

Figure 1-1. Society, Citizens, and the Prison	27
Figure 1-2. Research Orientation to Review Criteria.....	33
Figure 1-3. Research Orientation to <i>Mandela Rules</i>	34
Figure 1-4. Visits. NSW. (photo: Bradley 2018)	35
Figure 1-5. Research orientation to the UN Technical Guidelines.....	36
Figure 1-6. Life-cycle of a prison facility (UNOPS 2016, p. 10 Figure 1).....	37
Figure 1-7. Research orientation to <i>Alternatives to Prison</i>	38
Figure 1-8. Research orientation to <i>Human Rights Approach to Prison Management</i>	39
Figure 1-9. Research orientation to <i>Towards Humane Prisons</i>	40
Figure 1-10. Research orientation to <i>Standard Guidelines for Corrections in Australia</i>	42
Figure 1-11. Research orientation to <i>Reimagining Prison</i>	43
Figure 1-12. Research orientation to <i>Contemporary Model of Prison Architecture</i>	45
Figure 1-13. Wellbeing in Prison	47
Figure 1-14. <i>Rehabilitation by Design</i>	48
Figure 1-15. Research orientation to <i>Prison Architecture and Humans</i>	50
Figure 1-16. Research orientation to the spectrum of reviewed practice and literature	54
Figure 2-1. Crotty's 'Scaffold' Four Elements of Social Research. (Crotty 1998, p. 4).....	58
Figure 2-2. Research Design Model - 'The Collective Method'	70
Figure 2-3. The PhD project and Design Research Practice.....	71
Figure 2-4. Research Test Site.....	73
Figure 3-1. Primary Coding	82
Figure 3-2. Composite Descriptions	114
Figure 3-3. Scripts.....	130
Figure 3-4. Town plan diagram. A central spine or – high street organises the hierarchy of spatial organisation.	133
Figure 4-1. The Research. Qualitative and Design Components	146
Figure 4-2. A new public entry building	150
Figure 4-3. Prison public entry building	150
Figure 4-4. Prison public entry building in urban setting	151
Figure 4-5. Visits facility re-imagined. Plan.....	152
Figure 4-6. Visits reception space	153
Figure 4-7. Visits internal courtyard	153
Figure 4-8. Visits 'seated' area.....	154
Figure 4-9. Plan for productivity and health.....	156
Figure 4-10. Concept for being productive and healthy.....	157

<i>Figure 4-11. Wellbeing and spirituality.....</i>	158
<i>Figure 4-12. Custodial entry. Views to library and multi-faith.....</i>	159
<i>Figure 4-13. Symbol of civic duty. The wall</i>	160
<i>Figure 4-14. Typical portals to correctional facilities</i>	163
<i>Figure 4-15. Re-imagined portals to custodial facilities.....</i>	164
<i>Figure 4-16. Test Site for Design Impact</i>	164
<i>Figure 4-17. Design Impact Plan with Interventions</i>	164
<i>Figure 5-1. Online Exhibition Analytics</i>	166
<i>Figure 5-2. Online Exhibition. Feedback Form.....</i>	167
Figure 6-1. Crotty's 'Scaffold' Four Elements of Social Research. (Crotty 1998, p. 4).....	179
Figure 6-2. Model of embedded social knowledge to inform custodial design.....	183
Figure 6-3. Embedded Social Knowledge Model in ICRC Cyclical Design Model	186

List of Tables

Table 2-1 Research Participants.....	72
Table 3-1. Social Citizenship Primary and Secondary Code	83
Table 3-2. Justice Primary and Secondary Codes	83
Table 3-3. Architecture Primary and Secondary Codes	84
Table 3-4. Social Citizenship – Composite Description Titles	115
Table 3-5. Justice – Composite Description Titles.....	115
Table 3-6. Architecture – Composite Description Titles	116
Table 3-7. Social Citizenship – Script Titles.....	131
Table 3-8. Justice – Script Titles	131
Table 3-9. Architecture – Script Titles.....	131
Table 3-10. Social Citizenship – Script Titles - Design	142
Table 3-11. Justice – Script Titles - Design	142
Table 3-12. Architecture – Script Titles - Design	143
Table 4-1. Design Oriented Scenarios.....	147
Table 6-1. Transition of Perspective: From Research to Practice.....	180

List of Abbreviations and Terms

Abbreviations

CSNSW	Corrective Services New South Wales
ILC	The Intensive Learning Centre
ESK	Embedded Social Knowledge Model

Terms

Penal environment

The penal environment refers to secure environments that come under a justice jurisdiction. It speaks to the whole of the prison environment both physical and sociological. It is the whole of the prison and justice environment as it appears to the rest of society. It is the prison and its interactions beyond its immediate surrounds.

Custodial environment

In this research the custodial environment refers to any space that is within the secure zones of a prison. Custodial environments are predominately experienced by staff, prisoners, official visitors, health services, legal services, visiting family and friends.

Custodial environments can be known by people external to the outside even if they have not personally experienced them. This experience is most likely informed through different forms of media (news, web, podcasts, movies), word of mouth, or advocacy organisations.

Acknowledgement Traditional Owners and Land

I acknowledge the Wangal, Gadigal, Cammeraygal, and Bidjigal People of the Eora Nation, the Yuin, and the Wiradjuri People upon whose ancestral lands this research was conducted. I pay respect to the Elders both past and present, acknowledging them as the traditional custodians of knowledge for these lands and water.

I acknowledge that sovereignty has never been ceded. It always was and always will be, Aboriginal land.

Acknowledgements

This thesis is the culmination of many life experiences. My own, and the many voices that are within these pages. I acknowledge and thank all that have contributed to this work. I acknowledge those that allowed passage through the prison walls. I acknowledge those within the walls and your generosity and trust in sharing your stories. I acknowledge and thank those on the outside of the walls who gave their time and supported the study through their specialist contributions.

It feels like the path to the finish will be reasonably straight forward at the outset of a PhD. This, of course, is rarely the case. Health, Covid 19, and simply finding a way through played its role over the time of the study. For me, I have the great fortune to work with the Design Innovation Research Centre and Designing Out Crime at the University of Technology in Sydney. I acknowledge and thank current and past colleagues of DIRC and DOC. DIRC and DOC is a special place of intelligent and kind individuals and was the ideal backdrop for this PhD.

I am a late bloomer. I started in Architecture late in life after having spent a lot of time on building sites. The nature of late bloomers as students is they tend to exhibit a slightly heightened level of confidence in their own ability and knowledge of the world. Although I try to keep a level of self-awareness of this, I am no doubt guilty to some extent. This is not the ideal 'student'. I acknowledge both of my supervisors Dr Rohan Lulham and Dr Michael Er for their respective knowledge and having the confidence in me and giving me the space to do this work.

Many thanks to the stage examiners and conveners, Dr Lindsay Asquith, Associate Professor Dr Jaqueline Lorber-Kasunic, Associate Professor DIRC Douglas Tomkin, Professor Shankar Sankaran, and Associate Professor Franklin Obeng-Odoom.

Many thanks to Christina Houen for editing and comments.

I am indebted to my partner Ruzika Soldo. I thank her for her support and for sharing in this journey. I thank her for her encouragement and for our conversations of the future together 'once this is over'.

Chapter 1: Introduction – The Research

1.1 FOREGROUND

In many places around the world, prisons are places of mass incarceration (MacKenzie 2020; McIntosh 2018; Moran 2013, p. 2; Philipson 2018; Vera Institute of Justice & MASS Design Group 2018, p. 6). Wener (2012, p. 7) and others (Dostoyevski 1911, p. 229) contend that prisons are critically related to the philosophy a government, and furthermore, the entire criminal justice system. As Dostoyevsky asserts a society ought to be judged by how it treats its criminals (ibid), whereas Wener argues that the prison is, 'the physical manifestation of a society's goals and approaches for dealing with arrested and/or convicted men and women, and it is a stage for acting out plans and programs for their future' .

But what are these plans for our fellow citizens that are serving time as punishment? In addition, why has the enactment of the plans for their future conducted within the architectures of mass incarceration? Why is it that descriptions of the modern prison are associated with the typology of the 'warehouse'? (Jewkes, Slee & Moran 2017; Simon in Simon & Sparks 2013, p. 67). Does the warehouse represent (Nadel & Mears 2018, p. 13) what we want for the incarcerated citizen and their (and our) future as a society?

The International Red Cross (ICRC) in their guide to a participatory approach Towards Humane Prisons (Baggio et al. 2018) note that society benefits when prisons work well as they perform their role to provide the conditions that are right for the a person's successful returned to society (Lulham & Klippan 2017). They counsel prison design practitioners, '...prisons are built to last for decades, and each design choice will affect thousands of human beings for generations to come' (Baggio et al. 2018, p. 16). For me, as a professional architect, working in this field, and in undertaking this study, the ICRC's view on the effect of prison environments is a chilling thought. To think that thousands of lives across generations will be directly impacted by design choices informed not by those that are required to live and work in these environments, but from the encoded depiction of 'them' (Garland 1990, p. 30) handed to the architect to conceptualise these environments (Moran, Jewkes & Lorne 2019, p. 70). And further still, even if there is a comprehensive understanding of the need and characteristics of the people that will inhabit a future prison, Rapoport (1990, pp. 15-6) makes evident an even further uncoupling between those that are designing and those that are being designed for. He argues that 'One of the hallmarks of man-made environment research is the realization that designers and users are very different in their reactions to environments, their preferences, and so on, partly because their schemata vary'. As Fikfak et al. (2015) note that the missing voice in custodial architectural research is the voice of the

prisoner and, it could be argued further, staff and other people that come into contact with the prison environment.

The gap in what we know as architects in terms of what we are directed to design versus what might be thought necessary by those that have lived experience of these environments is the location for the construction of knowledge in this study. Rather than taking the starting point of custodial design that takes its reference from a utilitarian 'what works' paradigm that, as Scharff-Smith (2015, p. 38) argues; 'fits well within a framework of penal populism', the study takes the position of knowing very little and through the engagement with prisoners, staff and a cohort of external participants, seeks to construct new knowledge about prison design through an interpretive constructionist epistemology and the employment a methodology with a phenomenological perspective (Crotty 1998, pp. 4-5).

The construction of knowledge in this study is not a broad-brush attempt at painting out the gap between what a justice institution mandates in a prison design brief and what is desired from a canvassing of participants with lived experience. This clearly would be unfeasible as there are no boundaries to what could be explored in terms of design, and therefore limit the study to developing practice-based research on methods towards how it could be explored (Candy 2006, p. 3) which, while useful, is a less fulfilling proposition. This brings us to the topic of the research and its classification. First to the topic and why this topic was chosen. Around 2012 Designing Out Crime (DOC) at the University of Technology Sydney received a project brief from Corrective Services New South Wales (CSNSW) (McGregor 2012) for which I was the design architect in my position as Senior Research Associate. The brief was for an Intensive Learning Centre (ILC) in an existing correctional centre. The brief wanted the students to sense citizenship and connection with their social roles external to the prison. The notion of the incarcerated 'citizen' and the environmental qualities that support this as a matter of wellbeing and identity has remained with me since, both personally and professionally. Having experienced many more prison environments over the years by being involved in other custodial projects with DOC and CSNSW, I developed a concern for the way in which architecture was conceptualised. It was apparent to me that, apart from some efforts to insert design novelty of the 'outside', custodial design offered few opportunities to the prisoner or staff member to identify with the outside. 'Citizenship' as a topic emergent from design practice with DOC informed the type of research taken.

The research is situated as practice-led having emerged from existing practice and its intention to contribute to future practice with design as an instrumental part in the inquiry (Rust, Mottram & Till 2007, p. 10). The components of this research are outlined in detail in Chapter 2, but for the purposes of this introduction, note the study is comprised of three major components. The first is the qualitative that constructs new knowledge about prison architecture in the context of 'citizenship'. The

qualitative component employs a phenomenological perspective and descriptive hypothesis for design. The second is the practice component that utilises architectural drawing to conceptualise the findings from the qualitative component as contribution to custodial design knowledge. The third component is the formalisation of the methodology developed for the research into a practice model to 'vision' future custodial environments prior to the establishment of the project brief. The model offers a new role for the design practitioner as a facilitator and co-narrator of social concerns. This new role requires the visualising skills of the designer to make visible future worlds based on the collective lived experience. The model called 'Embedded Social Knowledge' in Chapter 6 is the contribution to custodial design practice.

A natural target audience for this research is those that commission the construction of prisons and those that design them. Indeed, the findings will be of interest to these justice and architectural professions, but there is a social agenda to this study and by employing a lived-experience phenomenological perspective, the intended audience includes those that are materially impacted by the design of prisons. The audience for the thesis is reflective of the array of its co-participants that contributed to it through the interviews. Justice agencies, justice staff, custodial staff, people that have experienced prison (prisoners and staff), design professionals, justice advocates, and people in the public realm with knowledge about prisons are all considered to be the audience and collaborators in the ongoing design of justice environments. The study may be criticised in that this is trying to be all things to many. Whilst I understand this criticism – it is commonly understood that prisons have an impact on the whole of society for generations, and if we return to the opening of this introduction chapter, it is behest on society that we state our goals and work towards a corresponding architecture that reflects our wishes for the wellbeing of all. As Farrelly (2021) observes of the nature of contemporary architectural practice, '[it] lends itself to authority-centrism, prioritising experts and governments and sending its users to the periphery'. The approach of this study is to bring the users of custodial environments in from the periphery and in doing this, centering their voices in the design process. I suspend the position of whether prison should be abolished or expanded, rather, acknowledge that they will be a thing for the foreseeable future. The intentions of the research is to take steps towards change in how prisons are imagined rather than perpetuating the inevitable past (Davis 2003, p. 8).

The research questions are:

What architectural style or amenity for places of incarceration would facilitate and maintain the roles and responsibilities of being a citizen?

What architectural style or amenity for places of incarceration would exhibit the civic qualities of just punishment?

1.2 RESEARCH OBJECTIVE

The thesis has two objectives as a contribution to new knowledge in the field of custodial architecture:

- to examine and conceptualise the aesthetic and functional qualities of prison architecture in the context of citizenship and justice from an existential viewpoint.
- to propose a practice methodology for custodial architecture that affords inclusion of the lived-experience viewpoints of those that feel the impact design decisions made on their behalf.

1.3 THESIS AIMS AND CONCERNS

This research study takes its reference of enquiry from a previous design project for Corrective Services NSW, where an Intensive Learning Centre (ILC) was designed as an addition to an existing correctional centre. The design brief asked for the architecture to enable the students attending the new ILC to develop a sense of connection with community and maintain a sense of being a citizen of broader society. Building on this notion of how architecture can facilitate connection with society, the research examines and presents new 'concepts' (Manzini et al. 2015, pp. 130-1) for prison design through a lens of citizenship. It does this at the outset through phenomenological enquiry (Creswell & Poth 2016, p. 78 referring to Moustakas (1994)), engaging with people inside and external to the prison environment to develop new knowledge about how a prison might look and function from the standpoint (Harding 2004) of those who are directly impacted, or have an interest in the outcomes of prison environments. The collective findings of the enquiry are then envisioned as design-oriented scenarios (Manzini et al. 2015, pp. 130-1) through architectural practice methods of conceptualising new worlds (Foqué 2010, p. 44). The design interventions are achieved via a descriptive method of 'scripting' collective concerns that emerged from the phenomenological study and articulating these scripts through drawings of the collective viewpoint. The process transforms the findings from the phenomenological enquiry into descriptions of new possibilities of social innovation in prison design (Stephan 2015) (and potentially, a material embodiment of this). The aim is to contribute new knowledge to prison design and future architectural practices generated from those who have direct experience (and rarely have a say) in the impact of prison environments (Costanza-Chock 2020; Harding 2004).

The author is cognisant of the relatively small size of this research project in relation to the enormity and complexity of a state justice system which prison environments are a part of. This, in part, informed the desire to pursue a practice-led phenomenological methodology, which will have an enduring impact on the custodial design into the future by working with, and building on, existing prison

design knowledge rather than 'blue-sky' propositions that do not reconcile with the nature of the lived experience enquiry. The scope of the research is framed by the prison as it is broadly understood in terms of function, management and design. Design hypotheses and scenarios are considered in the context of making an impact on existing function rather than imagining alternatives to prison (Baillie 2019). It draws on Merleau-Ponty's (Perez-Gomez 2016, p. 146) soccer player on the field concept, where the boundaries of the field are known and each move of the soccer player 'modifies the character of the field and establishes in it new lines of force in which the action in turn unfolds and is accomplished, again altering the phenomenal field'. Drawing on this analogy, the prison is the field of a shared social context (Perez-Gomez 2016). The research takes on the role of a late-game substitution, seeking to change the nature of the field by contributing different manoeuvres through design interventions to achieve a shift in the understanding of the prison in its shared social context. The extent of the research contribution to future prison environments and design practice remains within the setting of the field, and intentionally proposes specific interventions related to the concern of citizenship (Cross 2006, p. 44).

1.4 MORAL AND THE ETHICAL: WHY PRISON RESEARCH?

'If the prison debate concludes that imprisonment is unavoidable, then I can agree that decent architecture will have its place. If prisons, however, are found to be ineffective instruments of misery, then architects must question their part in the prison business.'

(Allen 1977, p. 2)

Allen sets the ethical dilemma for this research. As a person and as an architect, I struggle with the idea of 'prison' and the mindfulness that by doing this research suggests that prisons will be a thing into the future. My concern, regardless of the aims and outcomes of this research, is its contribution to the enduring idea of the prison. I also struggle with Allen's suggestion that if prisons are needed, then the architect's role is justified and further builds on prevailing paradigms of justice and punishment (Scharff-Smith 2015, p. 36). Reconciling the notion of 'prison' is a challenge for anyone who is involved with their design or research (Liebling 1999, p. 147). This reconciliation falls somewhere on the spectrum that is defined by the constant societal tensions that exist between the 'punitive' (Bauman 2000; Brown & Wilkie 2002, p. xx) and 'abolitionist' positions (Davis 2003; Scott & Sim 2020). Regardless of where I (or any person engaging in custodial design) find themselves on the spectrum, it is critical for designers to recognise their actions will influence the quality of life for thousands of people directly (Baggio et al. 2018, p. 16), and those close to them for generations. Moran, Jewkes & Lorne (2019, pp. 67-8) argue there has been little exploration into architectural ethics in a moral sense and identify

the tension between ‘professional conduct’ being at odds with ‘ethical’ behaviour in undertaking commissions on projects like prisons. The following sets out this research’s position.

The prison estate in Australia has substantially grown in recent times and will continue (Bajkowski 2016; Nicholls 2016). This growth suggests it is an inevitable and permanent feature of our social lives — so natural that it is extremely hard to imagine life without it, and continues as part of our social setting (Brown et al. 2013; Davis 2003, p. 10). At an international level, this sentiment is shared by the International Committee of the Red Cross (ICRC) (Maurer in Baggio et al. 2018, p. 6): ‘it is a fact that prisons exist and that new prisons will continue to be built in many places around the world’. The ICRC’s concern is that prisons are being designed to sustain life, in line with other international guides from the United Nations, but are lacking in the consideration of the human and the ‘humane’. In the face of the inevitability of the prison as an enduring social phenomenon and new prisons being designed, the architectural profession will undoubtedly continue to be involved in the creation of the carceral environment. Given the apparent inevitability of prisons into the future, the ethical and moral question of this research is how it makes a positive contribution to prison design but not contribute to the ‘inevitability’ of the prison and the pains of imprisonment (Hancock & Jewkes 2011, p. 612).

There is also the argument; “if I don’t do it someone else will”, that is often used to justify the ethics and moral engagement (and the substantial fee’s from commissions) of commercial practice (Sorkin 2013). Regardless, if you are involved with prison research or commercial design, it is imperative that the researcher/designer makes apparent their position, not as a justification, but to articulate a moral position with respect to their work and its aims and be open to criticism on that position (Creswell & Poth 2016, p. 261). Simmons (2010) describes the dilemma of wanting to do something about an issue that appears to have an inevitability to it (as in the prison), and when there seems to be no ideal outcome:

As people who care about injustice, want to *do* something about it, and we want our philosophical theories of morality and politics to inform our actions. What we *don’t* want is to wait and wait for the conclusions of philosophers’ endless ideal theorizing, conclusions that at best will offer us no more than a vision of a world that seems impossible distant from the deeply unjust world we actually inhabit ... But it is important to remember that even most non-philosophers who are active in the cause of justice do in fact have in mind, however vaguely, an ideal of justice toward which they take their campaign to be ultimately directed.

Having worked in and researched prison environments in the last nine years, I have a personal and professional view that custodial architecture must have the

'humane' as its core ideal (Baggio et al. 2018; ICPA 2021; Simmons 2010). This notion extends to the recognition that the effect of the prison is felt beyond the person in their environment, but is more akin to Crewe's (2011) concept of feeling the power of imprisonment like architectural terms of 'depth', 'weight', and 'tightness'. These qualities that are sensed from the architecture are shared and flow from within the prison and beyond, out to society and into the family homes of those with loved ones inside.

The opportunity arose to undertake a research project examining the prison through the lens of 'citizenship'. It emerged from previous work with Corrective Services NSW, who articulated this as the ideal of the design of the environment for their ILC. Drawing on John Rawls's *A Theory of Justice*, (Simmons 2010, p. 7) where the ideal and non-ideal theory is in play: "The ideal part presents a conception of a just society that we are to achieve it if we can". For this research, the ideal is found in the research questions regarding the viewpoints of a diverse group of how prison could look and function if it was considered as facilitating social connectivity and responsibility. The ideal conception of the prison viewed through the lens of citizenship is the aim of the research. This ideal is an aspirational goal for seeing things other than how they are now—the ideal of the prison that contributes to societal wellbeing and supports the individual in their capacity to be part of society.

The second part of Rawls's theory is the non-ideal: 'The nonideal theory asks how this long-term goal might be achieved, or worked towards, usually in gradual steps. It looks for courses that are morally permissible and politically possible as well as likely to be effective' (Simmons 2010, p. 7). Rawls's non-ideal theory makes this research possible in that it can be tracked back from the ILC project, where the concept of citizenship was first tabled, and provides an incremental mechanism for exploring ways in which it might be achieved over time and into the future. The non-ideal approach also dictates the methodology to think about citizenship and prison environments as a connected social phenomena in an open manner and to test these as multiple hypotheses (Foqué 2010; Manzini et al. 2015).

Thinking openly about the prison as contributing to a 'connected social phenomena' and thinking about courses that are "morally permissible and politically possible as well as likely to be effective" (Simmons 2010), a research methodology that includes socially diverse views on the prison environment, including those with lived experience is necessary. The inclusion of 'lived experience' has only been fleetingly engaged with and never substantially contributed to architectural practice (Alsop, Thornton & Feix 2006; Gehry 2017).

In summary, utilising Rawls's ideal–nonideal theory of justice enables the aims of the research to be set. It allows the research to enter into conversation with participants with life-experience about what the *ideal* aesthetic and function of a prison is in the context of citizenship. It also provides a framework for a methodology

that is inclusive, but open to experimentation through design practices of visual interpretation of lived experience viewpoints.

Through the ideal goal of citizenship and non-ideal of multiple hypotheses through design practice to explore this goal, the discussion of social connectivity emerging from this research will contribute new ways of conceptualising the prison as a social phenomenon for the wellbeing of the individual and broader society. These methods of including marginalised voices in design practice will contribute to the discourse of the moral and ethical aspects of custodial design that are consistently under scrutiny .

1.5 RESEARCH ORIGINS

In a previous research project for an ILC in an existing correctional centre in NSW, CSNSW asked for the architecture to assist the prisoner-learners to self-identify with being a citizen and to conceive of connections with community beyond the confines of their custodial environment (McGregor 2012). The notion that architecture affects citizenship has taken hold as an enduring concern for the qualities of custodial spaces in other custodial projects since. This concern is associated with the qualities of the built environment of prisons and the meanings to those that live and work in them. and whether this contributes to the social wellbeing of the individual and of society, and to the 'common good' (Rousseau 1977, p. 61). The apparent disconnection between an environment for the deprivation of liberty and the potential for maintaining healthy social awareness in prison environments has evolved in the author's thinking both professionally and personally and is the central concern that this research addresses.

The significance of the study is the unique opportunity to uncouple from the dominant design practice thinking, methods, and processes of commercial architectural practices and institutional design procurement (Consoli 2012; Tobe, Simon & Temple 2013). It does this by shifting orientation from the top-down institutional-informed design brief that symbolises a state's vision of justice (Fairweather & McConville 2000; Garland 1990, p. 30; Nadel & Mears 2018; Scharff-Smith 2015) by 180°. It makes present a social collective of standpoint views that are directly affected by custodial environments (Costanza-Chock 2020; Norberg-Schulz 1983).

Fundamental to the methodology of the research is its phenomenological structure (Creswell & Poth 2016, p. 81) that establishes and shares common viewpoints on the aspect of citizenship and the design of prison environments for those that rarely have input to the design of the environments that they experience (Costanza-Chock 2020; Fikfak et al. 2015).

A bit like writing music, sometimes the melody is written first and then the lyrics. Sometimes the other way around. Either way, a song emerges and develops into a

thing of art that takes on its own identity, and if the artist is lucky, it goes out into the world, to be adopted by many as their own with their own interpretation of the song. This research is similar. The idea that citizenship was important to the design of prisons was not mine. It was our client contact for the ILC project, Fiona McGregor (2012), who wrote into the design brief that they needed the architecture to assist the prisoner students maintain their social connection with community. Having engaged with this concept and designed for that as part of the brief and informed by the subsequent experiences of custodial environments more generally experienced across the NSW prison portfolio, this research focuses on the questions of citizenship and architecture. In effect, these questions were set in the ILC project as a particular concern, and the methodology was written afterwards as meaning and custodial architecture developed into a broader context of how architecture is conceptualised and what meaning it holds for those that experienced it.

1.6 CHAPTER OUTLINE

Chapter One introduces and provides the background, theory, and orientation of the study as in a practice field. It articulates the nature of the research being a practice-led study within an existing architectural/research practice of the thesis author. It outlines the intended contribution of knowledge and where those contributions are expected to be received.

Chapter Two details the research design. It outlines the epistemological setting, theoretical perspective, methods, and methodology (Crotty 1998, p. 4) of the qualitative component of the study. It also outlines a four-part method that transitions the qualitative part to the practice part of the study. A research model is included in part 2.1.6. The chapter concludes with an explication of how the study fits within the author's practice over the period of the PhD and other aspects including details of ethics approvals and research management.

Chapter Three comprises the whole of the qualitative component of the study. It includes 'significant statements' and 'composite descriptions' (Creswell & Poth 2016, p. 81) in thematic grouping. Individually, the composite descriptions are the 'essence' of what was expressed in the interviews grouped thematically. They contribute to 'scripts' that are a descriptive mechanism of the collective concerns emergent from the interviews (Stephan 2015, p. 218). Combined with the design-oriented scenarios in Chapter 4, 'scripts' are the descriptive part new knowledge generated by the study about prison environments in the context of citizenship.

Chapter Four comprises the practice component of the study into prison environments in the context of citizenship. Through the combination of scripts from Chapter Three that related to parts of the prison, design-oriented scenarios (Manzini et al. 2015, pp. 129-32) are developed as a suite of visual concepts that respond to the findings of the qualitative study component. Whilst 'scripts', and 'design-oriented scenarios' are independent concepts that can be re-interpreted into multiple

hypothesis (Foqué 2010, p. 45), they are collectively the contribution to new understanding about custodial architecture from this study.

Chapter Five includes the practice component of exhibiting the research findings. The chapter includes how the research was exhibited, the management of the exhibition by the author, the receipt and documentation of responses to the research, and a discussion on the nature of the responses. The chapter also includes an additional script as a response to the critique of the exhibition.

Chapter Six comprises the component that contributes new knowledge to architectural design practice. It reflects on the research and proposes a collaborative design model titled, 'Embedded Social Knowledge' (ESK) . The ESK model is linked to a global design procurement model (Baggio et al. 2018, p. 87) to give context and relevance to its specific contribution to custodial design practice.

Chapter Seven takes a reflective approach to look back at the study. As Schön (1992, p. 40) notes on 'problem setting' which in its way, the study does through the collective identification of social concerns, 'We set the problem (custodial design), we select what we will treat as the "things" of the situation (citizenship), we set the boundaries of our attention to it (participants), and we impose upon it a coherence which allows us to say what it wrong and in what directions the situation needs to be changed (scripts/design-oriented scenarios, and ESK model). The chapter looks back and takes stock 'change' (Valters 2015, pp. 7-8) to complete the study

1.7 THEORY. PEOPLE. PRACTICE. SEEING THE WORLD

Having set the task, to examine the connection between citizenship and architecture in custodial design, the following section seeks to establish an understanding of citizenship for the research to work within. On the surface, describing citizenship seemed to be a relatively simple task, referring to a number of broad-brush social understandings of the phenomenon. However, at the Australian national level, there is no description of citizenship, let alone anything that defines what roles, responsibilities or rights a citizen has under the Australian Constitution (Rubenstein & Lenagh-Maguire 2014, p. 27). Dreyfus QC MP (2008, p. 59) expresses the view that citizenship 'in its broadest sense, refers to membership of a political community and can include both formal and legal aspects and symbolic aspects of identity and belonging'. What transpires in the community is the concept that citizenship is unique to every individual—a bit like everyone has their own take on the same song (most love it, some hate it, some get the lyrics wrong).

The following section will outline the theoretical approach to citizenship for this research.

1.7.1 Theory

Society is bound to change “men”, and if it does not do what it is meant to do, improve them, it will worsen them.

(The Social Contract, Rousseau)

What the good is to the individual, the just is to society.

(Justice as Social Choice, Social Contract Theory, Gauthier)

Marshall (Rubenstein & Lenagh-Maguire 2014, p. 28) argues there are three elements of citizenship: the civil, political, and social. The civil and political are associated with the technical nature of citizenship, including voting rights, entitlements, and political activity (Bosniak 2000). The civil and the political-technical aspects of citizenship are not the concern of this research, which comes from the ILC project, where citizenship was spoken of in terms of connection with community and becoming a better person. Citizenship in relation to architecture concerns the necessary conditions for recognising and maintaining citizenship regardless of an individual's circumstances (Brown & Wilkie 2002, p. 323). Linda Bosniak (2000, p. 9) outlines an understanding of social citizenship, which is adopted in this research as a concern for people's collective experience of themselves that evokes a quality of belonging and a felt experience of community membership.

Part of the reason for doing this PhD as a practising architect is to explore how we, as a society, arrived at the prison as the 'warehouse' (Jewkes, Slee & Moran 2017; Simon in Simon & Sparks 2013, p. 67) and how citizenship would manifest in design if we canvassed views of those that live and work in prisons rather than refer to the state view (Moran, Jewkes & Lorne 2019; Scharff-Smith 2015). To do this is to question the social system that deems the warehouse model to be an expression of the 'general will' and, for the 'common good' (Rousseau 1977). Rousseau's social contract theory is concerned with the way in which society moves towards the common good. It is not a specific democratic procedure, but a combination of many aspects of society (Anheier 2018) that “aims to protect and preserve each individual's interest within the social contract” (Brettschneider 2011, p. 56).

The general will is described by Rousseau as an understanding that “each one of us puts into the community his person and all his powers under the supreme direction of the general will; and as a body, we incorporate every member as an indivisible part of the whole” (Rousseau 1977, pp. 60-1). The concept of a social contract is employed in this research as it embodies all of society as 'every member' and does not delineate the whole. Every member is equally considered as part of the whole and cannot be otherwise; Earl Warren argues for the equal recognition of the citizen that is temporarily incarcerated: “Citizenship is not a licence that expires on misbehaviour” (Earl Warren in Brettschneider 2011, p. 50).

Rubin (2012, p. 328) argues for the exploration of social issues through the lens of the social contract: “social contracts are a conceptual vehicle that links the individual and her/his schemas to the larger social structure in which she or he is situated and she or he acts”. This approach in the research informs the discourse between being a citizen and the roles and responsibilities of the individual towards society. Rubin argues, “(social contract) is a theoretical way of engaging in that fundamental sociological task of using one’s sociological imagination and connecting individual troubles to public issues, or connecting the micro to the macro” (Rubin 2012, p. 328). The framing allows for contemplating and examining how things are, particularly the relationship of prison design and society. For example, issues of mass incarceration and the emergent typology of the warehouse are considered to be representative of a prevailing punitive but apathetic social sentiment towards prisoners and punishment (Bauman 2000). The question is whether this is *actually* the general will, or whether we have, over time abandoned our social voice and silently consented to a separated society of them and us (Bauman 2000; Rousseau 1977, p. 70).

1.7.2 People

The discussion about social contract, general will, and the common good requires structure so that the research can examine the prison as a social phenomenon with participants (Creswell & Poth 2016). Emile Durkheim argues that “society and its patterned forms of mutual interaction can only function if there first exists a shared framework of meanings and moralities” (Garland 1990, p. 23 referring to Durkheim). This shared understanding pertains to the enquiry of this research into shared perceptions of the aesthetics and functions of prison and punishment. Garland suggests that most people often see only two parties involved in punishment — those that are under supervision and the supervisors. Durkheim argues there are three stakeholders in punishment: The controlled, the controllers, and the onlookers (Garland 1990, p. 32). The controlled and the controllers are the prisoners, custodial staff, and the corrections agency. Durkheim’s introduction of the onlookers is less clear, and potentially a limitless field.

An argument could be formed that the ‘onlooker’ participant cohort ideally would be open to any citizen that wanted to participate. For the purposes of maintaining a manageable participant cohort, the ‘onlooker’ group is restricted to people who have experience in and knowledge of the operation and outcomes of punishment (Creswell & Poth 2016, p. 81). The main factor for this is, while the research is interested in understanding the prison in the context of citizenship, it is not an open question on the whole of citizenship, but specific to the lived experience of citizenship in prison. Casting the net wider raises other concerns that are different to those of this research and would involve a different theoretical perspective and methodology.

Figure 1-1, “Society, Citizens, and The Prison“ shows Durkheim’s three cohorts (controlled, controllers, and onlookers) that have direct interest in the impact of prison as subsets of Rousseau’s whole of society. The main cohort of onlookers, controlled, and controllers are further explicated in their subgroups of family (onlookers and controlled), official visitors (onlookers and controllers), and non-custodial staff (both, controllers and controlled). The complete overlap of the diagram is the whole of the prison community and that is completely within society.

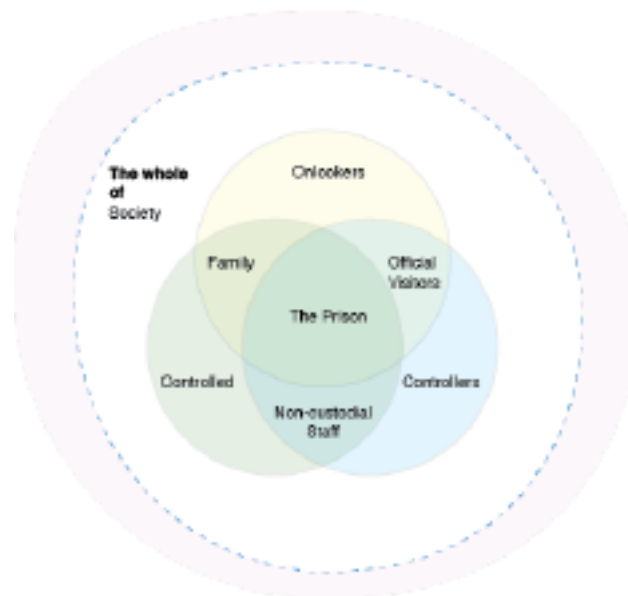


Figure 1-1. Society, Citizens, and the Prison

1.7.3 Tribes

In this section on social theory, the approach draws its theoretical frame from Rousseau and Durkheim, with a universal contextualisation of society, citizenship and punishment. The following holds another lens to the concept of citizenship to contest the universal application of the term. The notion of citizenship, as Turner (2012) argues, is less than universal when viewed in the context of the society of the inside versus the society of the outside, where one cohort’s values and membership are the antithesis of the other’s.

Rawls (1990, p. 139) theoretical approach to the general will is “social cooperation through an identity of interests where the product of the cooperation is to experience a better life than if individuals were to live as independent entities indifferent to the greater benefits of social collaboration”. The notion of the identity of interests is the point of separation between those on the inside and those on the outside. While inside, prisoners are expected to undertake various programs and activities to change their offending behaviour to non-offending (CSNSW 2021). Turner (2012, p. 331) argues, “despite attempts to foster the notion of rehabilitation

programmes as geared towards the re-composition of the prisoner alongside contemporary imaginations of the ideal citizen, there are many reasons why prisoner will consistently achieve anything but that.” Further,

Despite all effort to conform to the ideology of liberal society, the prisoner experiences civic death during imprisonment. What is apparent is that, once incarcerated, prisoners become intrinsically incorporated into and practice the citizenship to the community of the prison, which is, in many cases contra the manifesto of the ‘outside’ ideal. (Turner 2012, pp. 331-2)

Returning to Rawls’s notion of “cooperation through an identity of interests”, it is apparent that there is a social divide between the outside ideal of citizenship and the ideals of prison citizenship — two tribes. While the research takes a Durkheimian approach to identifying the social stakeholders of prisons and punishment, it will not attempt to explicate an ideal of citizenship as the goal of architecture for the returning citizen. Rather, it will rely on the phenomenological perspective (Crotty 1998, p. 7) of the lived experience of interests/concerns that emerge from the data generated by the research (Moustakas 1994).

What remains now is to take a position on how to think about citizenship from here on in the thesis. This is particularly relevant, as it has a design component and there needs to be a general paradigm of what the prison is being designed for. Faulkner’s approach to citizenship as ‘human beings’ aligns with some of the recent literature for humane design (Baggio et al. 2018; Dorst et al. 2016; Fransson et al. 2018; Hyde 2019), and also the fundamental elements of architectural design:

Citizenship is a way of talking about people as human beings, in the context of [their rights and legitimate expectations], and of their duties and responsibilities — to one another and to the state — in a liberal democratic society. It assumes a foundation of principles, especially the principle that people are of equal value and deserve equal respect as human beings, regardless not only of race, nationality, gender, religion or disability, but also regardless of differences in their authority or status. (Faulkner 2003, p. 288)

Extending Faulkner’s views on citizenship as a way of seeing people as of equal value and of deserving respect regardless of circumstance or status, Buckmaster & Thomas (2009) discuss social inclusion in Australia. Similar to how Turner (2012) highlights the problems, holding up an idea of the ideal citizen as a utilitarian goal, they note that inclusion has similar conceptual problems and argue for “a contemporary and reflexive citizenship framework”. They argue for a reflexive approach to citizenship with an emphasis on equal membership of, and full and active participation in, the community; “a framework of social citizenship could significantly broaden the scope and ambition of social inclusion” (Buckmaster & Thomas 2009, p. 37).

1.7.4 Theory in Practice. Practice in Theory

We encourage them to think, not of theory *and* practice, but rather of theory *in* practice and practice *in* theory.

—(Milech & Schilo 2004)]

The objective of this section is to address the bimodal nature of the research as it straddles theory and architectural practice (Milech & Schilo 2004). It is one of those sections in a thesis that could sit in the research design or the theory chapter, as there is an equal tension and constant interplay between theory and practice throughout the research. Situating it in this section is influenced by Smith (2008, p. 183), who argues, “coming to terms with the symbolic logics of culture should be the first and not the last step in any analysis of reform of criminal justice”. Coming to terms with the symbolic logics of culture in this research means a phenomenological understanding of a concern — in this case, citizenship and its social representation in prison architecture. Having developed this understanding as new knowledge about the topic, practice follows to articulate these understandings in a word and visual format (see Research Design). In the final stage of the thesis, theory again drives the discussion of the practice-led project to conclude.

A theoretical question in interpretive research is recognition that the reader will be asking, “How do you know whether the phenomenological interpretation is a thing, and what makes the descriptions (words and visualisations) valid as a representation of a collective viewpoint?”

Durkheim speaks of the sociological fact (Durkheim 1964, p. 13); in a general sense as an ‘understanding’ that is shared universally. There is a collective understanding of the topic offered from this research, but Durkheim addresses the nature of these limitations: “It is general because it is collective, and certainly not collective because it is general ... It is to be found in each part because it exists in the whole, rather than the whole because it exists in the parts” (Durkheim 1964, p. 9). So, the phenomenological approach of the research and the interpretive descriptions do not claim a universal fact, but offer new understanding of the prison architecture by exploration through multiple hypotheses, design oriented-scenarios, and sharing of the work (Foqué 2010, p. 34; Manzini et al. 2015, pp. 129-32). In this research, the practice methods of interpretation and design are part of the articulation of the findings. In practical terms, Chow (2010, p. 2) clarifies the nature of this relationship:

Practice-led research is research in which the professional and/or creative practices of art, design or architecture play an instrumental part in the inquiry. Practices here imply the creation of an artifact; thus the knowledge and ability to conceive and to make artistic,

design or architectural artefacts are an essential part of practice-led design. The definition makes very clear that practice serves as a means for research and is subservient to it. The creation of an artefact in practice-led research is not its goal, but rather the key to generating knowledge and understanding.

The design scenarios generated by this research are specific to the topic and contribution to custodial design knowledge. The methodology developed for this research, and its final iteration as a model is the contribution to the architectural practice.

1.7.5 Seeing the World

The aim of this section is to discuss how the research deals with the nature of people in their environment and how meaning is constructed, whether it is through the symbolism of architecture, or some other way. The purpose of this section is to clarify the philosophical position of the researcher and the research on “seeing the world” — that is, do we see buildings affecting meaning through person/artifact relationship? Or, is meaning generated from some source other than the symbology of the built environment? It’s a discussion that lies at the heart of the penal practice of “what works”, where “evidence” of environment having some form of effect on behavioural outcomes informs policy and generates the criteria in the reports and briefs that determine a prison’s environmental characteristics (Nadel & Mears 2018, pp. 1, 13; Scharff-Smith 2015, p. 38).

The issue that exists in the “corrections industry” — particularly in the jurisdiction that this research is conducted, NSW — is that some of the primary metrics of penal system success (Government 2021), recidivism rates are consistently high and remain on an upward trend, even with the effect of COVID-19 reducing the numbers in 2020-21. If “what works” relies on evidenced-based research (on what has gone on in the past) (Scharff-Smith 2015), then it seems apparent that architecture’s effectiveness in addressing the societal outcome metrics that contribute to rehabilitation and reintegration is destined to fail, because it is built on the evidence of failed facilities while hoping for positive change. We can see this in the change of the prison aesthetic and function towards the aesthetic of mass incarceration — ‘trying to build its way out of a prison crisis’ (Crook 2017a). For those of us who are involved with custodial research and are trying to solve a societal problem, Latour (2004) points to the issue of a natural inclination to view the problem in its own context, thus perpetuating the paradigm of the prison being an enduring social “fact” that is inevitable:

The mistake we made, the mistake I made, was to believe that there was no efficient way to criticize matters of fact except by moving away from them and directing one’s attention toward the conditions

that made them possible. But this meant accepting much too uncritically what matters of fact were. (Latour 2004, p. 231)

In recognition of Latour's critique, questioning prison design procurement contributes to the assumptions of this research. The assumption that architecture has a subject/object/effect outcome that can be evidenced to produce policy that influences design decisions towards societal wellbeing outputs is questioned. Alternative means to understanding the relationship between people and their environment is explored as part of the new knowledge contribution to custodial practice. This development of alternative practice methods provides the vehicle to explore the research topic and ultimately, new knowledge in custodial design.

Scharff-Smith (2015) argues for a broader approach to prison research, to recognise the wider societal effects of imprisonment. He advocates for a shift from the what works approach, where the prison is seen as a "people changing" paradigm to one that is "context changing" to effect reform-oriented research. Shifting orientation of custodial design research from person/object/effect to "context/effect" allows for design practice to investigate social contexts as a way of describing prison architecture, rather than "what works". Seamon (2017b, p. 349 referring to the work of Jones (2000)) provides direction for understanding architecture as having societal meaning: "architectural meaning is multi-vocal, superabundant, and best understood via the varied individual and group experiences, situations, and activities associated with a particular sacred building or architectural work". Drawing on the work of Seamon and Jones (Seamon 2017b), "context changing" as a platform for enquiry through existential stakeholder participant enquiry and phenomenological research practice is central to the methodology for this research, which looks to develop new knowledge in custodial design.

1.8 DESIGN PRACTICE

Throughout the history of prison design, the aesthetics of incarceration is a form of articulation of the government's attitude towards justice and a reflection of the expectations of a society (Wener 2012, pp. 15-7). Prisons of the Victorian era exhibited rich sandstone fortification aesthetics symbolising the state's civic duty in keeping society safe. The aesthetics of the prison today are no less an articulation of the government's attitude towards justice and a reflection of society, but the aesthetic has shifted from one of sandstone decoration to industrial fencing and cameras. Further, the siting of prisons has moved from being a visible part of the urban fabric to beyond the urban limits in a further act of exclusion from social consciousness (Jewkes in Brown & Carrabine 2017).

The aesthetics of the industrial warehouse on the outskirts of the township are significant to contemporary social sentiment, as Bauman (2000, p. 205) argues: "the role of prisons in the post-correctional age is shown to be linked to new forms of

anxieties that characterize the populations of postmodern societies, and the political strategies that express and reinforce these widespread sentiments”. The fear of public and media attention to a prison has developed to a prison aesthetic that tries to be both invisible and punitive (Brown & Wilkie 2002, pp. xx-xxi). Notwithstanding that contemporary prison aesthetic is a physical manifestation of socio-political sentiment towards punishment, it does not reconcile with architecture’s obligation towards society to pursue social wellbeing, environmental and functional amenity, and beauty through design (Fairweather & McConville 2000, pp. 8-9). While there is more attention to this predicament outside of Australia (ADPSR 2020), prisons are designed to draw as little attention as possible to them, due in large part to the government’s aversion a punitive public and media (Brown & Wilkie 2002, pp. xx-xxi). The disjunction between architecture’s natural attitude towards social wellbeing and the prevailing contemporary prison aesthetic is a source of concern for this researcher and is the catalyst for doing this research.

1.9 LOCATING THE RESEARCH IN A LITERARY AND PRACTICE LANDSCAPE

1.9.1 Research Orientation to Literature and Practice

This section will locate the research against a collection of publications of varying disciplines in the field of custodial design. The publications included in this section are sourced from practice and academic literature sources. The purpose is to examine, compare, and contrast how this practice-led research project that employs design methods informed by stakeholder life experience relates to other discussions of custodial architecture. The relevant global representation of the United Nations, academic literature, and speculative design by design groups share an interest in promoting architecture’s potential for societal change. The interest in penal practice and custodial architecture is vast in term of number/institutions. It is not within the scope of this thesis to place this practice against the expanse of literature on prison design. Therefore, to maintain a focused relationship with the literature, limited criteria are applied, relating to two aspects that are specific to this research: literature or practice is selected that: relates to design as having a technical or social outcome; and is based on traditional government-specified design outcomes, and/or employs (or has a tendency towards) other stakeholders having a say in custodial design. The following diagram sets out these two criteria and a cross graph with the opposing outcomes at either end of the axis. This research project, “Citizen Prison” in Figure 1-2 is interested in the way architecture can facilitate social connectivity and citizenship and have a somewhat strong orientation towards stakeholder-enabled design. The research is interested in exploring design procurement methods that are different to traditional government-directed design in their attention to stakeholder agency. The qualification of ‘somewhat’ is in recognition that questioning the status quo of custodial design

procurement is in its early days; over time, in future projects, it is likely that there will be a stronger inclination towards offering design agency to stakeholder cohorts.

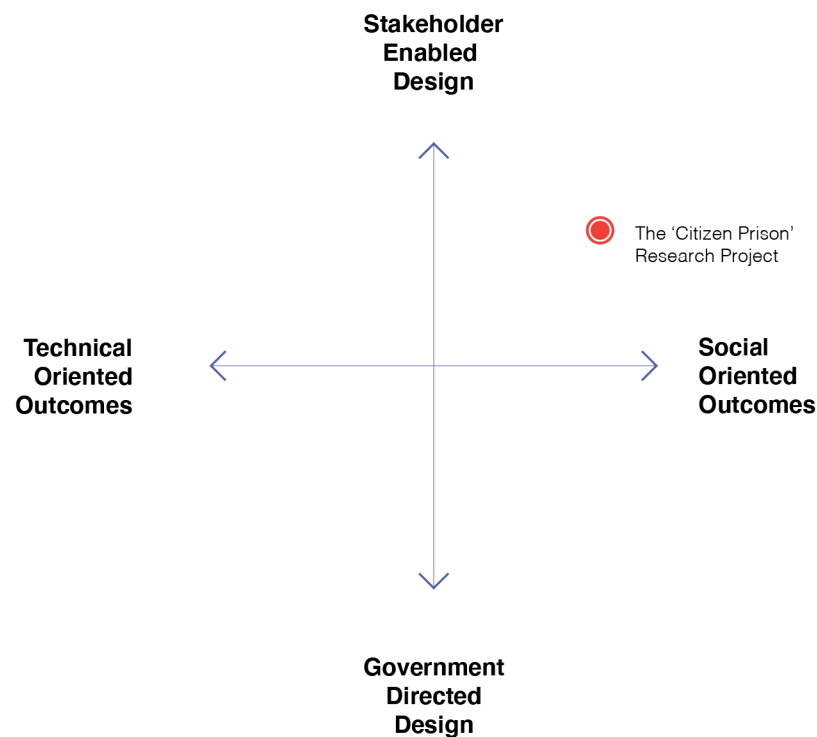


Figure 1-2. Research Orientation to Review Criteria

This study identifies and stratifies the literature/practice field into four groups to contextualise the nature of their relationship with custodial design. The four groups of the field:

- International non-government organisations: United Nations, International Committee of the Red Cross
- Jurisdictions in Australia
- Architecture (academic or profession)
- Non-architecture (academic or profession)

The approach to the following review is to broadly start at the international level of the United Nations' guides to prisons and then work down through other international organisations, international audience publications, and local jurisdictions. The review then draws attention to a broad architectural field, custodial design, and finally, discusses non-architect sources. Whilst not exhaustive, which would prove unwieldy, the intention of this section is to give the reader an understanding through a narrative synthesis (Khangura et al. 2012, p. 3) of where this research sits within a diverse and meaningful field of literature and practice.

The research project itself is located in Figure 1-2 in the quadrant of social oriented outcomes and stakeholder enabled design. This reflects the objective and the methodology of the research. Understanding aspects of citizenship and the

capacity for the prison environment to support a person to return to society with as much personal agency is a key field of new knowledge. To develop this knowledge and how this maybe achieved through design involves engagement with people that are directly impacted by the prison environment.

1.9.2 International

The Mandela Rules.

The United Nations. 2016

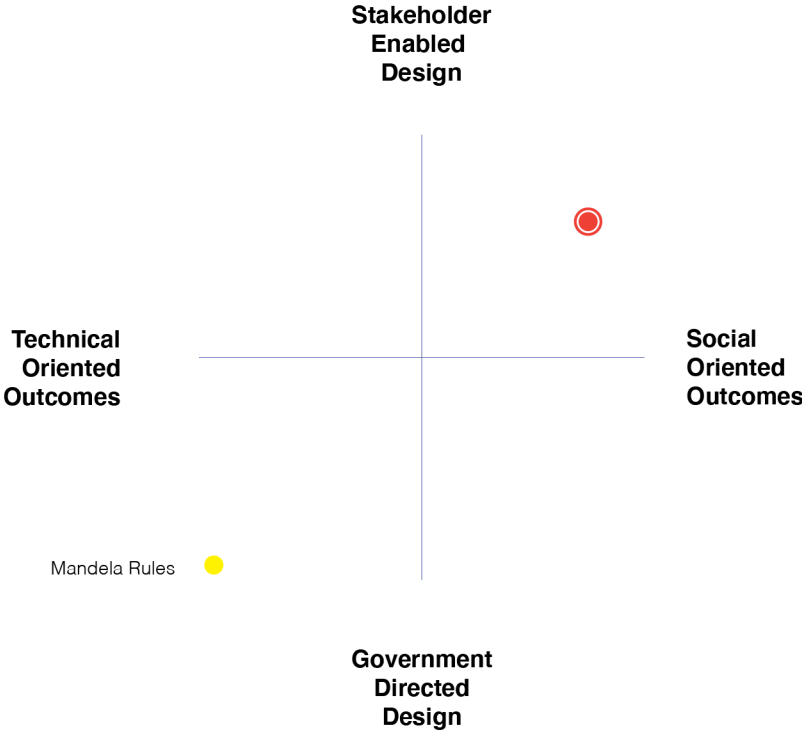


Figure 1-3. Research Orientation to *Mandela Rules*

In December 2015, the United Nations General Assembly adopted the revised rules as the *United Nations Standard Minimum Rules for the Treatment of Prisoners* (the *Rules*) (Nations 2020). These rules, known as the Mandela Rules are a global consensus of what is generally accepted as being good principle and practice in the treatment of prisoners and the management of institutions (United_Nations 1977).

The publication is not intended to describe a model system of penal institution, nor do they refer to any rule for the design of prisons. In effect, the rules apply to the processing and treatment of prisoners rather than to the design qualities of the spaces that the rules apply to. This appears to be a blind spot of the rules. If we take, for example, rule 58 under 'Contact with the outside world'; 'Prisoners shall be allowed, under necessary supervision, to communicate with their family and friends at regular intervals: (b) By receiving visits'. The limited description of 'by receiving visits' leaves a lot of scope for what this might manifest as in design. With only the simple transactional description, a corresponding transactional outcome in design

can be applied (Smith 2008, p. 179). There is no recognition of the human needs of a visiting space; it is the professional observation of the author over the past nine years that visits are mostly dire spaces of fixed seating, painted concrete block walls, resilient flooring and space lighting. Clearly, an international rules document needs to have an efficiently articulated intent, but it seems that the *Mandela Rules* are very much open to design that responds only to the prisoner as a category or demographic and not to the human. A transactional reading of the *Mandela Rules* could manifest design of environments that are 'potentially socially bleak and psychologically brutalizing' (McConville in Fairweather & McConville 2000, p. 15).

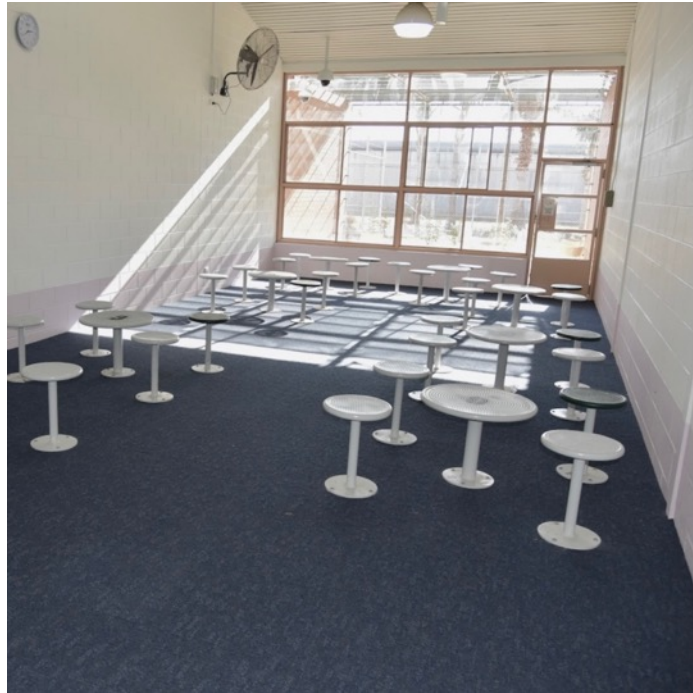


Figure 1-4. Visits. NSW. (photo: Bradley 2018)

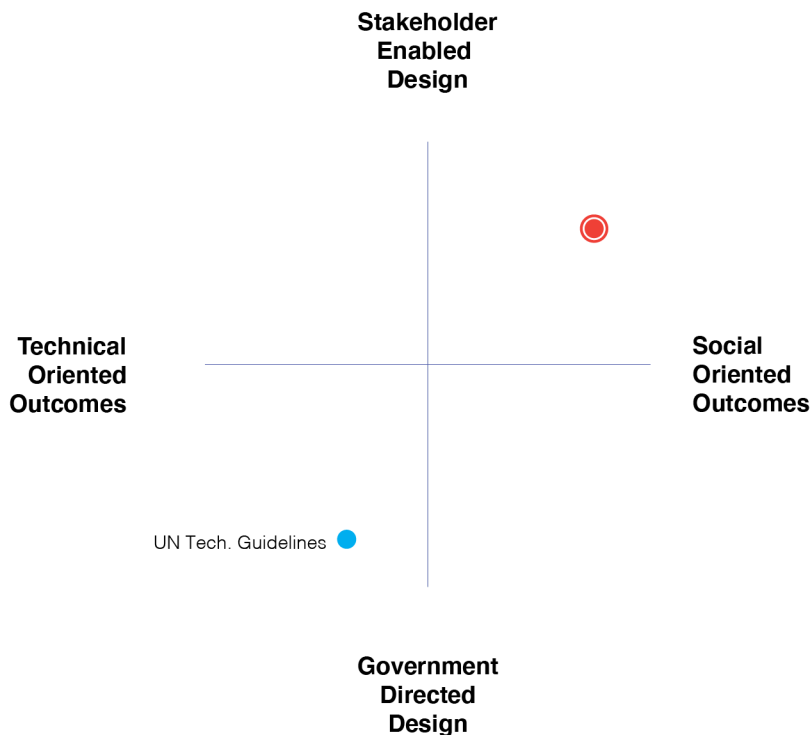


Figure 1-5. Research orientation to the UN Technical Guidelines

The *Technical Guidance for Prison Planning* (the *Guide*) sets out the technical and operational considerations of the *Mandela Rules*. Significantly, in the foreword to this publication, Andrea Huber (UNOPS 2016, p. 9), discussing the design of prisons as having a primary purpose of protecting society from crime and reducing recidivism argues, 'The architecture and facilities of a prison can either support this purpose, or pose a major obstacle'. She indicates that 'infrastructure' can 'mirror trust in the reformative potential of detainees or reflect an environment that dehumanises and institutionalises its occupants'. This argument has a similar tone to MASS_Design_Group (2019) argument that 'Architecture is never neutral. It either harms, or it heals'. The following will discuss to what extent this document bridges the shortfalls of the *Mandela Rules* in terms of human-centred design and to what extent it interfaces with the criteria of discussion.

The opening statement of the document notes that its primary purpose is to facilitate a human rights-based approach in the development of prison infrastructure (UNOPS 2016, p. 10). It notes that its goal is to provide technical guidance to ensure that prisons respect the human rights and dignity of detained individuals and to provide safe, humane and rehabilitative administration of prisons. It has a strong link with this research as it discusses the life-cycle of a prison facility, including design.

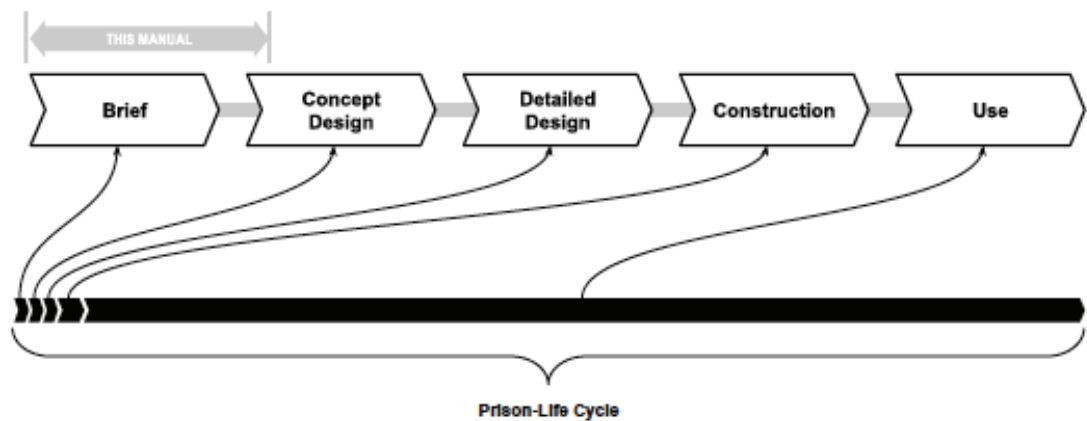


Figure 1-6. Life-cycle of a prison facility (UNOPS 2016, p. 10 Figure 1)

The sections that are covered by the 'THIS MANUAL' bracketing is significant to this research in they cover the same part of the design procurement cycle that this research does.

The *Guide* makes the observation that the purpose of a prison goes beyond the containment of prisoners and the protection of society at large. This start to the document suggested that it might align with the direction of this research, situating the prison as part of a social network that it relies on for services and support organisations. These groups are referred to as the stakeholders to identify and consult at the master planning stage of a new prison project. There is a practical recognition of the social interface with society but no proper recognition of human-centred design. There is a section, 'Master planning considerations for the design of humane prisons' but this is entirely limited to environmental psychology aspects of the built environment — Indoor space, natural lighting, sound, views, and outdoor spaces (Wener 2012).

The *Guide* is intended as an addition to the *Mandela Rules*. Read in conjunction with the *Rules*, it is very feasible that a design team would conceive of a well-designed space that is comfortable. The issue remains that the design of prisons is primarily driven by the principles of the safety of society and reduction of recidivism in the prisoner. There is no recognition between the *Rules* and the *Guide* (other than a footnote directing the reader to another UN guide to alternatives to prison) that the ownership of 'safety and recidivism' is other than the government agencies and the justice system. This ownership of the problem of the prison is central and its manifestation in prison design is central to the concern that this research addresses. The architecture of the elected as a representation of the common good is described by Durkheim (in (Garland 1990, p. 30) as, "the living symbol of society's sacred beliefs being administered by the state conceived as a secular priesthood protecting sacred values and keeping the faith".

The *Guide*, while recognising that a prison is more than a facility in itself and has significant connection with society, is disappointing because it is understood in a transactional sense. The *Guide* does a good job in laying out how complex prison facilities are and how expensive they are. The pro forma schedules have good cut-through and would be useful in establishing an indication of scope for a new facility. While comprehensive, it follows the traditional procurement process and in a section that talks about the humane, it reverts to a person-environment schema that excludes the human.

Alternatives to Imprisonment.

United Nations Office on Drugs and Crime. 2007

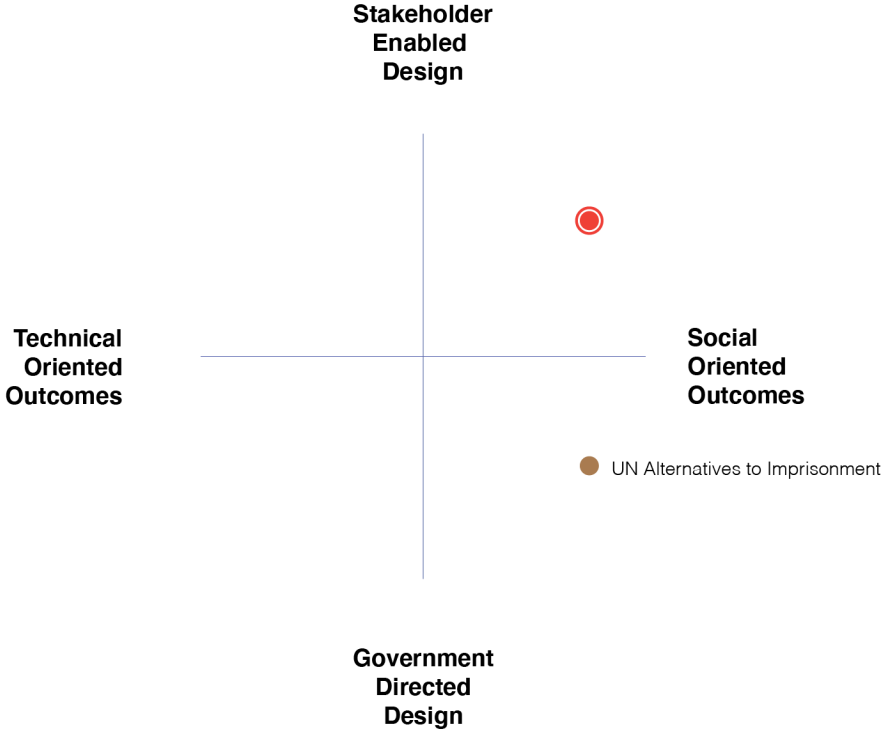


Figure 1-7. Research orientation to *Alternatives to Prison*

Alternatives to Imprisonment isn't a design guide, but does have relevance to this research in that it offers an insight to the people that are in prison and the impact on them and society of their imprisonment: "they find it difficult to keep in contact with their children and other family members" (UNODC 2007, p. 4). This insight is absent in the other UN documents, with their high-level global audience, where they discuss the person/environment qualities of prison and penal practice. *Alternatives* address alternatives to pre-trial and sentenced detention which form other kinds of design solutions (van Buren 2020), but these are beyond the objective of this research. It notes that its audience is criminal justice officials, non-governmental organisations, and members of the community who are "working to reduce over-

reliance on imprisonment” (van Buren 2020, p. 2), which does align with this research.

A section on ‘Imprisonment if overused’ argues that “invariably, the data will reveal that prisoners are disproportionately drawn from the poorest and most vulnerable groups in the community”. Whilst the publication advocates for alternatives to prison and that prison may not be suitable for many, it is a fact that prisons exist and new prisons will be built and that the many will continue to be imprisoned (Maurer in Baggio et al. (2018, p. 6). The conundrum for this research is that it has no intention to promote prisons, but recognises that they will remain into the future, and the current trends of large-scale places of detention does not seem to have any alternative in place beyond the neoliberal society’s further delineation of the undesirable and everyone else (Bauman 2000).

A Human Rights Approach to Prison Management. Handbook for Prison Staff.

Institute for Criminal Policy and Research

Birkbeck. University of London

International Committee of the Red Cross. 2018

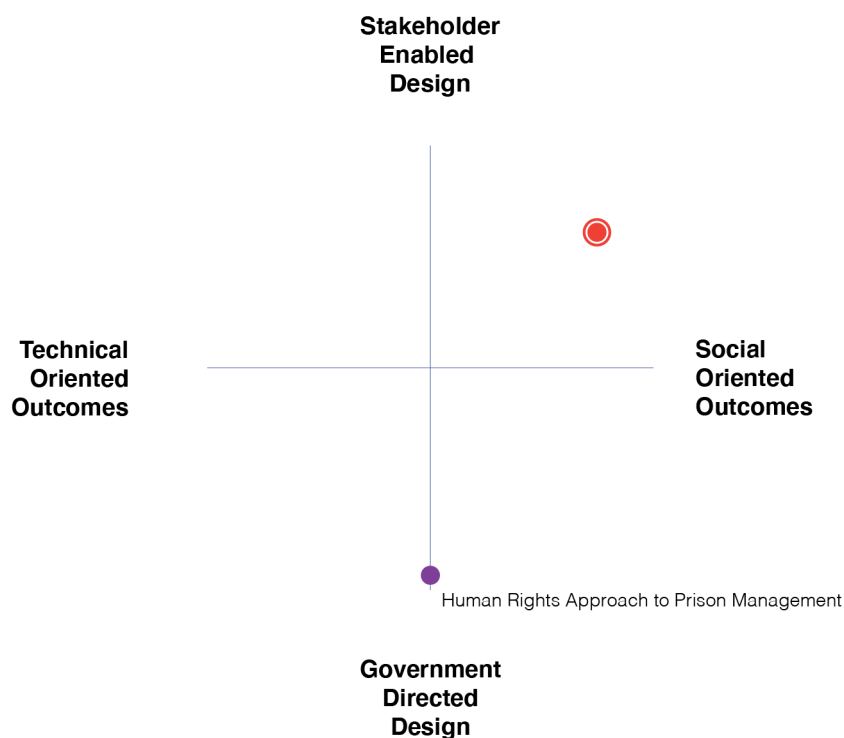


Figure 1-8. Research orientation to *Human Rights Approach to Prison Management*

The handbook starts with the sentence, “This handbook is intended to assist everyone who has anything to do with prisons”. Broadly, the document follows the UN publications discussed above (it includes an extended reference list), and expands on aspects of a human rights description. For example, “Family visits”

speaks about the qualities of the visits environment. They “should take place in conditions which are as natural as the prison environment will permit” (Coyle & Fair 2018, p. 104). Similar to the *Mandela Rules*, “get-out” phrases leave open the interpretation of what is “as natural as the prison will permit”, or “as much privacy as possible” so that justice agencies can use control of safety and security to override the environmental qualities that families may experience. When this language is adopted at a global level and interpreted by the local jurisdictions, it is likely to promote environments that feel like they recognise the bare minimum of human needs, and all the affordances of safety and security take priority over a meaningful conversation between family members in a comfortable visiting space (Baggio et al. 2018, p. 48).

Towards Humane Prisons. A Principled and Participatory Approach to Prison Planning and Design.

International Committee of the Red Cross. 2018

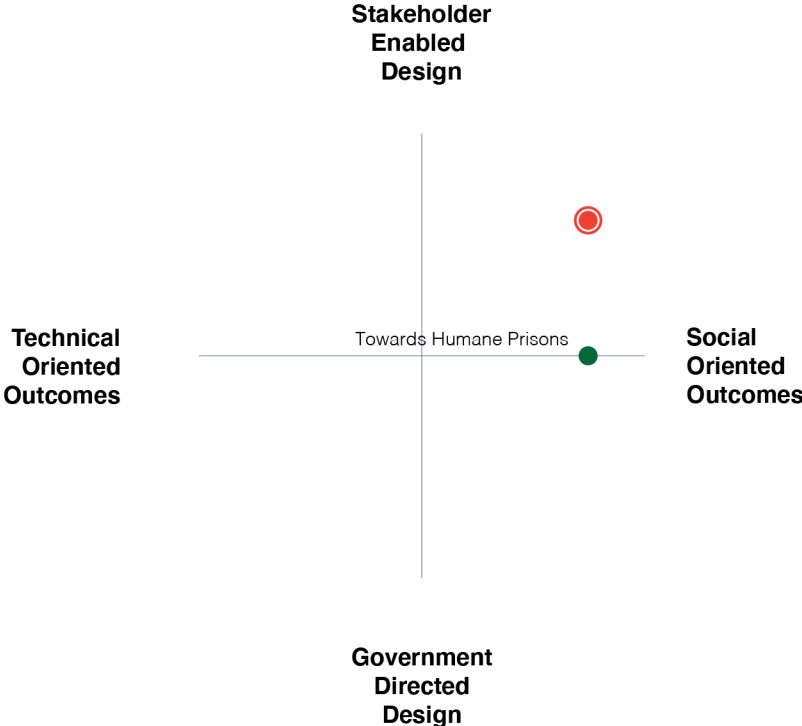


Figure 1-9. Research orientation to *Towards Humane Prisons*

Towards Humane Prisons (THP) is a publication of the International Committee of the Red Cross (ICRC). It is intended as a global guide and states its aim is to “bridge the gap” by connecting the underlying values reflected in the international guides (*Mandela Rules* etc.) to prisons and the practical matters of planning and design (Baggio et al. 2018, p. 14).

THP is structured over three parts; Foundational Principles, Applying Principles to Process, and Applying Principles to Design. They set out four principles at the outset: 1, “do no harm”, 2, “maintain a sense of normality”, 3 “promote health and personal growth” and 4, “maintain connection with society”. This research has a clear connection with THP where there is a focus on maintaining connection with community. They discuss this in terms of functions such as ‘visits’ and amenities to make contact with family and friends (Baggio et al. 2018, p. 125).

In terms of practice and participatory design methods, THP mention the involvement of relevant stakeholders at the strategic and design’ stages (Baggio et al. 2018, p. 78). At the strategic phase, they advocate for seeking out a diverse cohort of participants with specific expertise in prison planning. They point out that prisons are hugely complex in terms of their siting and associated considerations for supporting infrastructure. It makes sense that participatory activities be weighted (but not exclusively) towards specialists at the strategic stage, given that technical expertise is required to determine a project’s feasibility before embarking on design.

In the design stage, THP discuss participatory methods that include the life experience of those who work and live in prisons contributing to design (Baggio et al. 2018, p. 89). This is a point of cross-over with this research’s aim of developing ways of including life experience in prison design. THP sets out a range of participants (Baggio et al. 2018, p. 89), which is useful and has similarities with the participants involved in this research. The point of departure between THP and this research is they take more of a traditional approach to the design brief as the primary reference for an architect to work creatively with. The issue is that, even with participants having an input into a brief, as THP suggest they should, it is likely this input into the brief will always be in tension with the needs of safety and function.

1.9.3 Local

Standards Guidelines for Corrections in Australia

The State and Territory Governments 2012

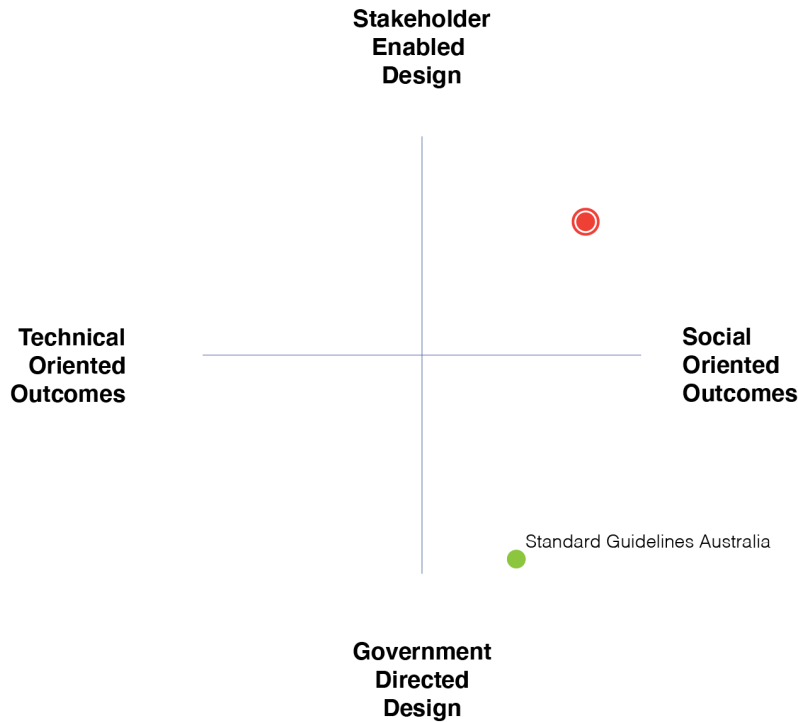


Figure 1-10. Research orientation to *Standard Guidelines for Corrections in Australia*

The guidelines constitute outcomes or goals to be achieved. They are “not an absolute set of standards or laws to be enforced” (Governments 2012, p. 6). It covers community and custodial corrections. Leaving aside community corrections, the guide sets out guiding principles for the management of prisoners and standards guidelines for prisons.

Broadly, the *Guidelines* follow the *Mandela Rules* format. A notable inclusion to this guide is, “Provide opportunity to make reparation to the community” (Governments 2012, p. 15). There is no elaboration on this, but it does open up a discussion about the design of prisons in relation to what environmental factors or aesthetic might promote reparation to the community. There are two approaches to this. It is either the individual making good, as in the work of (Maruna 2001; McNeill 2012) or the opportunity for restorative justice, which is provided for in the NSW justice system (Bolitho 2015) and the work of Barb Toews in the US (Toews & Howard 2012). The former version lends itself to viewing restorative as being an internal design and the symbols that would support making good, whereas the latter is a function that does not have a dedicated space in the NSW system that is specifically for the purpose of restorative Justice.

With regard to criteria, the *Guidelines* are more operational in nature and do not mention design or who designs. They do, as previously noted, offer an opening to important consideration of design towards making good with society.

1.9.4 Architecture

Vera Institute of Justice and MASS Design Group

Reimagining the prison.

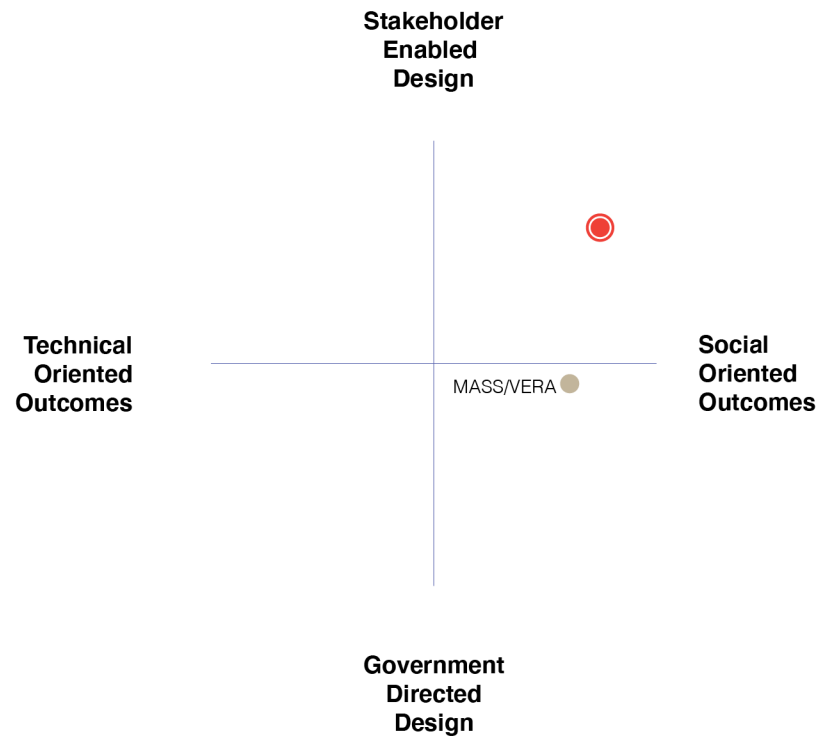


Figure 1-11. Research orientation to *Reimagining Prison*

This publication is co-authored by the US Vera Institute of Justice (VERA) and MASS Design Group (MASS). The document adds design strategies to VERA's other publication of the same title, *Reimagining Prison* (Delaney et al. 2018). To that extent, the joint publication that includes the design strategies will be used here for review.

VERA's mission is "To drive change. To urgently build and improve justice systems that ensure fairness, promote safety, and strengthen communities" (VERA Institute of Justice 2020). MASS's mission is 'to research, build, and advocate for architecture that promotes justice and human dignity' (MASS Design Group 2021). The joining of forces of these two organisations have produced a powerful commentary on the history, issues and reimagining of the future for the prison in the US. MASS pens a letter to the reader in which they address the conflict in being involved in prison design, but counter with the argument that "As Architects of the built environment and influencers in the social and political systems that define our

civic infrastructure, we (they/us) have been given a unique agency. And we have a moral obligation to act” (Vera Institute of Justice & MASS Design Group 2018, p. 5).

The document first outlines the history of prisons before discussing the nature of prisons in the US — ‘The Incarcerated States of America’ as a way of facing up to the issues in the US system.

The reimagined component of the document is written in a narrative style. It describes the “Reimagined Facility” as being “located within a thriving community. Being an interface for meaningful interaction between residents, staff, community, and considered a valuable asset” (Vera Institute of Justice & MASS Design Group 2018, p. 81). MASS notes that it “draws on what residents, staff, and community members have identified as the dual purposes of an ideal facility: punishment and a second chance” (ibid, p. 81). This is a very unusual statement to make and quite a generalisation, even though there is a footnote directing the reader to VERA’s other document (with no direct link to where it came from, and it’s not obvious where the reference is). Notwithstanding, no methods are indicated for how “drawing on what residents, staff, and community have identified” is made possible in the architecture of reimagining. This, and the following projection of the reimagined prison, are weaknesses in the document; the narrative continues in a kind of word painting of all the Scandinavian prisons referred to throughout the document. It all sounds good (the architectural renders are compelling), but without MASS showing the working parts, the link to “what the people want”, falls into the trap of architects projecting their own concept. As Rapoport (1990, pp. 15-6) argues, “designers and users are very different in their reactions to their environments, their preferences, and so on, partly because their schemata vary. It is thus the users’ meaning that is important, not the architects’, or the critics’; it is the meaning of everyday environments...”. In one of the prisons that MASS refer to (and which is often referred to across all the literature), Haldon Prison in Norway, “John K” (2018, pp. 34-5), a prisoner of Haldon for several years, confirms Rapoport’s argument:

With my hand on my heart I can say that the world’s most humane prison, decorated by artists and architects crushed me more than I had thought possible. It is only now, here in the old, worn-out, obsolete prison that I begin to feel dignity again. My maxim is:
Humanity rather than materialism. Things mean nothing, relationships mean everything.

The dilemma for everyone, when considering change to the prison such as MASS does is that it is arguing for reform in prison architecture in an environment where design is the guarded mandate of elected government (Garland 1990, p. 30; Rousseau 1977, pp. 60-1).

The Contemporary Model of Prison Architecture: Spatial response to the re-socialisation programme

Alenka Fikfak, Saja Kosanović, Mia Crnić, Vasa J Perović 2015

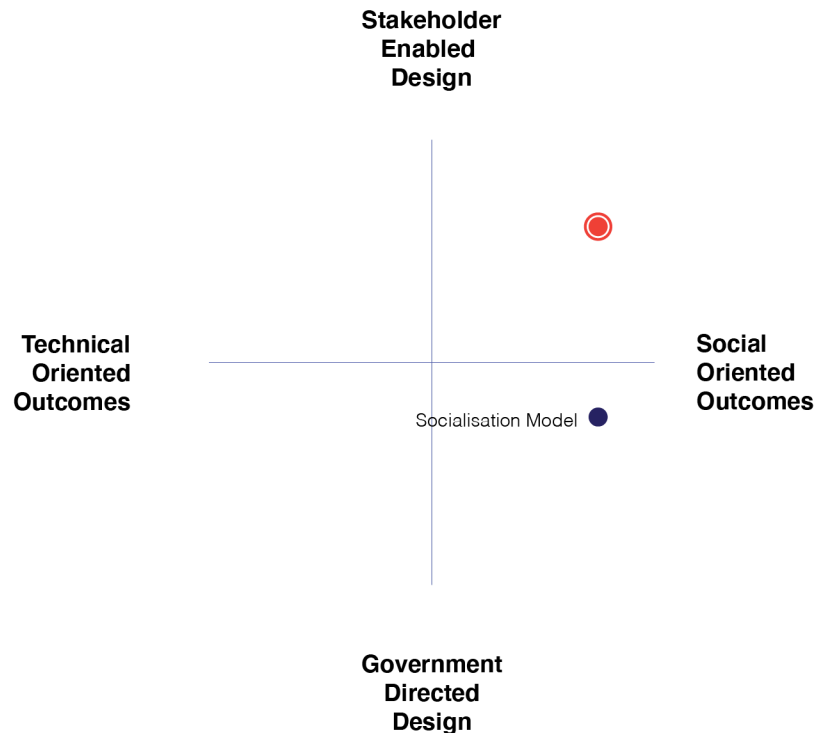


Figure 1-12. Research orientation to *Contemporary Model of Prison Architecture*

The authors (Fikfak et al. 2015, p. 27) argue “the contemporary model of prison architecture may be viewed as a spatial response to the re-socialisation programme” if punishment and re-socialisation is the purpose of prison. They define the main qualitative elements of prison architecture that respond to the re-socialisation of prisoners. They undertake a comparative analysis using their criteria on four case studies in Europe to test their framework of 30 indicators. They observe that there are similarities and differences across the cases studies, suggesting more than one approach to prison design can achieve a re-socialisation outcome.

In noting that prison leads to the social exclusion of people of an already disadvantaged, marginalised demographic, the authors argue that an important role of the contemporary prison is to provide opportunities for re-socialisation, in a similar nature to Maruna’s (2001) concept of a person “making good”. The concept is that a person develops self-understanding from being “criminal” to being viewed as “not a criminal” by society. The difference in Fikfak et al.’s article is the notion that the prisoner’s change of identity to a positive one is “to fit the expectations and behaviour of the common society” (Fikfak et al. 2015, p. 28). This concept of acceptance is contestable, as it relies on the reformation of the individual to something that is

acceptable to broader society, but the expectations of society are too broad to develop an idea of what the required personal qualities are for re-socialisation. Indeed, the notion of re-socialisation is complex. The standards of broader society may not be recognised by a historically marginalised demographic or, taking it further, might not even be something desirable to the individual who has opted for life on the edge of society rather than full recognised membership of an ideal citizenry (Turner 2012). Interestingly, the authors note that the re-socialisation concept requires the prison to be accepted by society. Combining the personal journey of resocialisation, and the external aesthetics of the prison as a whole, the authors set out architectural attributes of location, spatial concept and design, appearance of the prison, accommodation cells and cell blocks, and content and functionality. Under these five categories, the authors outline an expanded table of architectural “indicators of the spatial response to re-socialisation” (Fikfak et al. 2015, p. 30). These are a combination of environmental psychology indicators (Wener 2012) applied to the internal prison environment, and urban/architectural aesthetics of the exterior image of the prison.

This article is unique in the literature in that it views the prison in the whole context, as being part of society and having a social function to return prisoners to society. Whilst there is some weakness in the notion of re-socialisation towards a general idea of social acceptance, it is a valuable resource in viewing prison design as architectural elements at a strategic level rather than design related to a rehabilitation approach (Jewkes et al. 2016), or to “design principles” (Matter Architects et al. 2017). By keeping the discussion at the strategic level, the authors contribute ways of understanding prison architecture in itself (through their comparative analysis of case studies), or a framework to conceptualise future design.

A key point that the authors raise is the absence of the prisoners’ opinions on the prison in the context of re-socialisation, in terms of whether it is better to isolate or integrate. They argue that this needs to be researched. This challenge has been taken up in this thesis by engaging with prisoners to seek their views, along with adopting Fikfak’s et al.’s model of prison architecture indicators as a framework for developing future design.

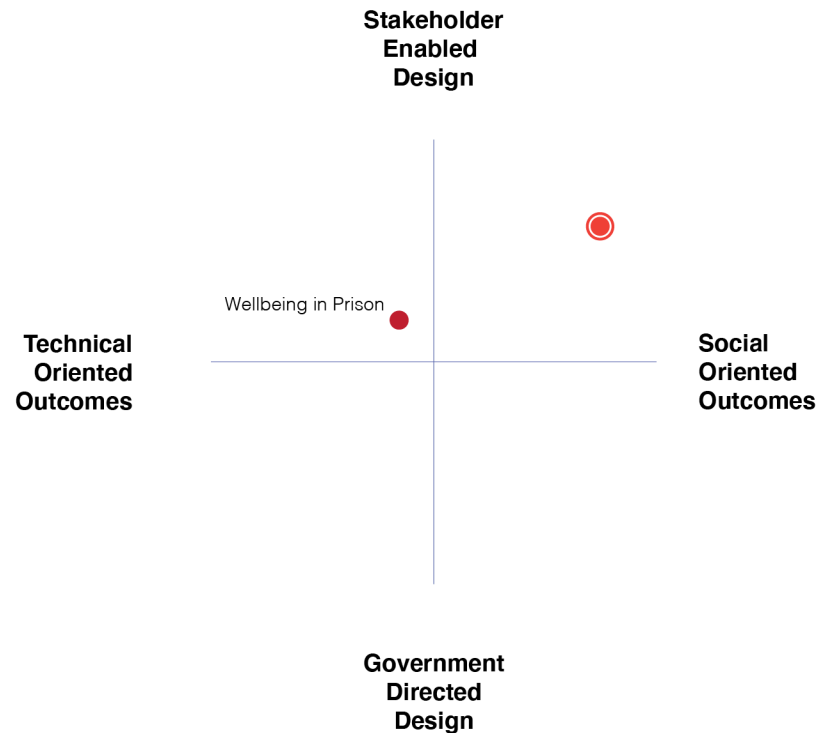


Figure 1-13. Wellbeing in Prison

Matter note that the purpose of the *Guide* is to improve the design of prisons. Matter et al. argue that “the way in which prisons have been commissioned and built in the past has proved to be a barrier to rehabilitation and the welfare of the workforce” (Matter Architects et al. 2017, p. 2). It is their intention to influence the procurement process of prisons. The *Guide* was authored in collaboration/cooperation with the state justice authority to provide independent guidance on design-related benefits within the prison environment and a method for monitoring.

The *Guide* notes in the early parts that it makes recommendations for “embedding design values in the government’s commissioning and procurement process” (Matter Architects et al. 2017, p. 2). It includes mechanisms for effective engagement with local stakeholders in the design process, including governors, prison offices and prisoners, and the introduction of a design review for prisons as an independent process.

In its “high level” strategies it encourages interaction with stakeholders for them to have input to the design brief, similar to THP. Interestingly, they play down the

significance of this engagement, seeing it as likely to have a minimal effect on the brief (Matter Architects et al. 2017, p. 140). Matter’s opinion on this is that the stakeholder involvement is necessary so there is support for the design brief. Otherwise, it shows the bias towards the empirical controls that they develop through their guide. The *Guide’s* methodology develops an important body of evidence and an advanced procurement process towards better environmental rather than social outcomes.

Rehabilitation by Design. Influencing Change in Prisoner Behaviour (+ synopsis of the same and journal article — “Redesigning the prison: the architecture and ethics of rehabilitation”)

Gleeds. UK. Multiple contributors (Architect led).

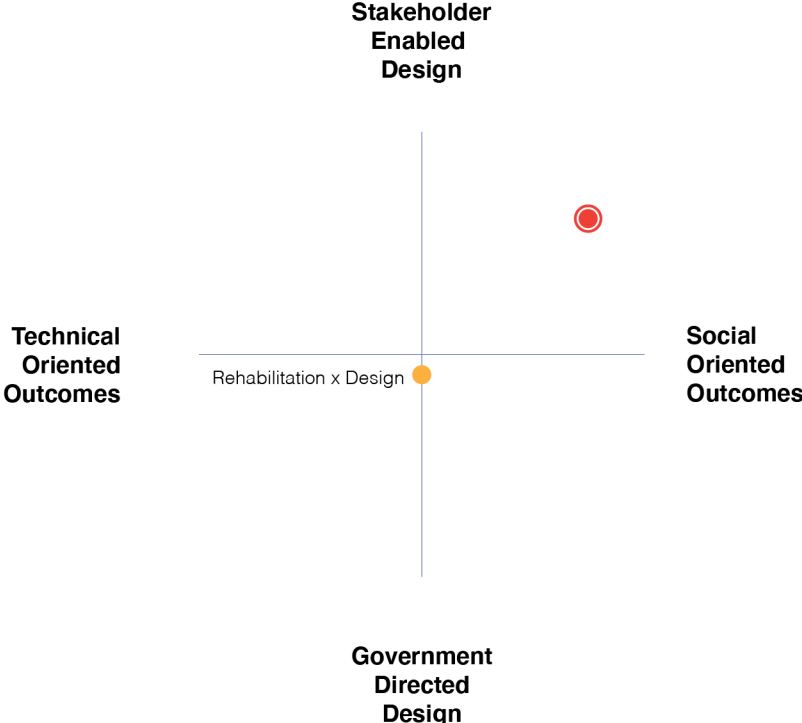


Figure 1-14. *Rehabilitation by Design*

Rehabilitation by Design is a report with contributing authors. It is a UK publication.

The introduction to this report paints a bleak picture of the UK prison system when this document was being written, just before BREXIT. The Lord Chancellor and Secretary of the State for Justice, Rt. Hon. Elizabeth Truss, observes the UK prisons:

Our prisons have been left to languish somewhat, as if they and they and the people are beyond redemption. Hidden behind high walls and razor-wire topped fences, prisoners have become objects to be

feared, warehoused and ultimately forgotten. (Jewkes et al. 2016, p. 9)

Truss argues further that prisons need to be “Places of hope ... rather than despair” which is underscored by the former Prime Minister, David Cameron: ‘They should be places of which turn remorse and regret into lives with new meaning’ (Jewkes et al. 2016, p. 9).

The authors note that rehabilitation is many things to many people and that in the complexity of its meaning, it is difficult to design for it. They refer to the “desistance” literature as their anchor point to rehabilitation and base their arguments on this theoretical standpoint. They refer to Sampson and Laub’s ‘turning points’ as the lens through which to view rehabilitation and design. They draw on the notion of ‘turning points’ (becoming a father, graduating from a course, getting a job) as significant life events that create social bonds and social capital (Jewkes et al. 2016, p. 13). They argue that exploring and creating opportunities for turning points will support prisoners to form more attachments to pro-social behaviours.

The architecture of turning points is a concept that aligns with the nature of this thesis, particularly if those turning points, whilst registering with the individual, also register with the individual’s relationships external to the prison. The authors recognise this by including family as one of the core elements (the others are staff, employment, and accommodation), a fundamental social connecting element between life on the inside and the community.

The starting point is hope. The authors note that they do not offer a model, but rather, offer a platform to discuss and debate the complex and interconnected systems that together encourage a desistance from crime. It is worth noting that the title of the document is not the same as the ‘desistance through hope’ intentions of the contents. It’s not clear why this is, but desistance is likely to be less clear in a title that rehabilitation.

Five key recommendations are made: “change the justice system”, “design prisons to encourage offenders’ families to visit more regularly” “designing prisons to be more supportive of staff”, “designing fewer, smaller, more ‘normalised’ prisons”, and “designing prisons to become places of positive change where an individual’s journey is both encouraged and sustained” (Jewkes et al. 2016, p. 20). All five recommendations have an aspect of social connectivity and have synergies with this thesis. Significant, and similar to the other literature, the discussion is primarily focused on the prison in its own environment and relies on recognition of change in the individual. This is particularly underscored by their incentive/disincentive concept of environmental qualities and behaviour of the individual. In contrast, the methodology developed in this thesis sees the change as being a thing of societal concern that is felt by more than the individual and has to be shared through the design of environments that recognise that change is possible. The authors see that

the key to change is an architecture of hope, and it is likely that trust and opportunities to shed shame and make amends are a broader societal aspiration for design.

Prison Architecture and Humans

Elisabeth Fransson, Francesca Giofré and Berit Johnsen (eds.). (2018)

Faculty of Architecture Sapienza University and University College of Norwegian Correctional Service.

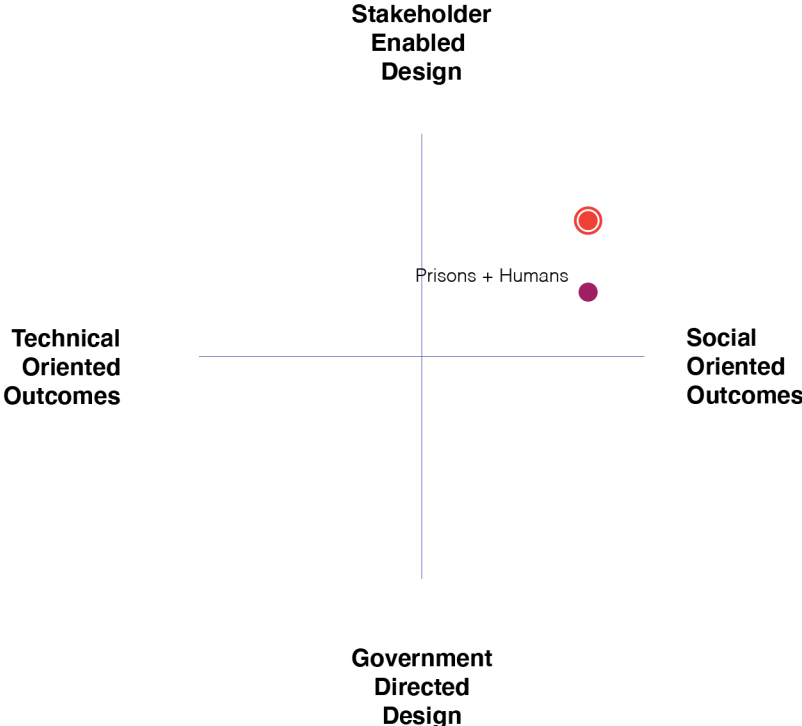


Figure 1-15. Research orientation to *Prison Architecture and Humans*

A chapter, “Inputs in the Design of Prisons” by Ferdinando Terranova, speaks about how the design process is changing to a great era of “participatory planning” (Fransson et al. 2018, p. 300). Terranova notes that their methods of participatory planning include the “collection of social input on imprisoned human beings, arising for daily experience of prison staff with their variety of professional skills, and prisoners or ex-prisoners”. Terranova argues similarly for the methodology of this research — “The designer has to live through the prison experience as a ‘participating observer’, interviewing the actors of the institution”. He then offers an approach in which a designer balances the findings and “turns them into technical pathways for design” (Fransson et al. 2018, p. 304).

“In this book researchers and architects study the socio-material conditions in prisons related to times, space, topography and interior” (Fransson et al. 2018, p. 26). The book expands on the other literature that is based on environmental

psychology to address the effects of “time, space, topography and interior” The collection of articles discuss various aspects of prisons, making a good addition to the person/environment nature of environmental psychology and bridging the thinking of the non-architectural and architectural. The authors have a more open, human-related objective of opening up new ways of doing research into the prison itself and its relationship with its surroundings. The authors note: “the book is an invitation to move into different prison landscapes and let pictures, theory, ideas and effects directly and indirectly enable reflection on connections and disruptions, lines and dilemmas related to prison architecture and humans” (Fransson et al. 2018, p. 26). A number of questions are asked in the introduction. One that resonates with this thesis is, “what can prison architecture breathe into the process of becoming in prisons, and does it contribute to becoming somebody else other than a prisoner?” This question is responded to in a chapter titled, “the Becoming of Punishment as an Unpredictable and Moveable Torment”. The author, through a moment of illumination and subsequent deep relationship with a prisoner over several years, provides an insight into how punishment is affected by ‘becoming’. Utilising Deleuze’s notion of the decentralised subject and its interaction with human and non-human activity, she uses the concept of ‘becoming’ as a way of understanding the effects of punishment and shows, as an example, how the apparent modern luxury of Halden in Norway is disconnected with the sense of punishment through her interviews with a prisoner over four years.

There is a lot of value in *Prison Architecture and Humans* to the architecture profession and this research, particularly where the theoretical underpinning of a phenomenon is unpacked by the author. Unfortunately, the chapter on “Inputs in Design of Prisons”, while offering some useful observations on prison design, is not brave enough to take the life experience beyond a technical understanding. Fortunately, the article “The Becoming of Punishment and an Unpredictable Torment” does, and together, they offer hope for the future designer.

1.9.5 Non-Architecture

The following non-architecture contribution is included, as it includes well-known people in the field from diverse backgrounds setting out a vision for the future of prisons. Whilst none are architects, this vision provides contextual relevance for the thesis as it looks towards future worlds of prison design.

The Future of Prisons?

York Ideas. Panel discussion. York University. 2020

Chair: Professor Matt Matravers. York Law School

Panellists: Alison Liebling, Scott Hechinger, Erwin James (Matravers et al. 2020)

The conversation of this chaired panel discussion had a broad topic of “future prisons”. The Chair noted it was an open discussion structure of “how prisons don’t work”, “what kind of reform is required”, and “what are the challenges”. The discussion never really settled on a clear view of the future of prisons, but discusses issues that are significant in contributing to a better penal system.

Liebling noted the change towards a sinister language of the penal system in terms of mass incarceration. She notes that the language is technocratic and ‘scary’ in its potential to societal wellbeing.

Irwin spoke of the segregation and the demonisation of those behind the walls. His experience of being an ex-prisoner has given him a general view that people inside do feel the guilt of their crime, and the “walls drip with shame”. Moreover, he believes that prison infantilises the prisoners and when most inside want to “make good”, there isn’t any opportunity to do so.

The future prison was not described as a physical thing but viewed through a number of social and alternative justice lenses. Liebling noted that the period that we are going through at the moment, with significant societal movements emerging, offers an opportunity to address the prison in a context. Irwin noted that the future prison looks bleak. His view is that “humanism” is the way forward and opportunities for people to come together and engage with other ways of justice need to be developed.

The takeout of this panel discussion for the research is that the period that we are in at the moment, with global social movements, opens up opportunities to have a discussion about prisons and alternatives.

Prison Architecture and Design: Perspectives from Criminology and Carceral Geography

Yvonne Jewkes, Dominique Moran (2017)

Two aspects of this journal chapter relate to this thesis. Firstly, the authors observe architectural aesthetics: prison is a manifestation of social attitude (Jewkes & Moran 2017, p. 1). Secondly, they suggest that building “humane prisons” will at some point become convincing in its positive effect on those that are inside and also have a positive societal benefit. The authors suggest the combination of personal and societal wellbeing will have the positive effect of rehabilitation and increased levels of desistance. From this they suggest the positive effects of humane architecture will inevitably turn around a punitive public attitude. They also indicate that, in the long run, a humane prison could result in a degree of de-carceration and a lesser reliance on prisons. They look towards the humane architecture of the Scandinavian prisons as representative of the humane environment that the UK should aspire to as it (at the time) entered into a period of custodial capital works projects.

It should be noted that the authors are the most significant and consistent contributors to the discussion on custodial architecture from any discipline in recent times. In this journal chapter, they leverage off Richard Wener's observation of prison environments representing both overt and covert socio-political agendas to position their argument for humane architecture in light of the recent prison designs that are akin to "modern industrial parks" (Jewkes & Moran 2017, p. 2). The overt agenda relates to the "what works" of the "reasonably consistent" living and working conditions of the internal environment. The covert agenda relates to what or who prisoners are in the mind of those that commission prisons in the wider society. It is the covert that this thesis is primarily concerned with and that the authors bring into question. They suggest that contemporary carceral aesthetics in the UK have a "mimetic quality, sequestering offenders, sanitizing the pains of imprisonment, and eliciting ignorance and apathy in the spectator" (Jewkes & Moran 2017, p. 13). They take aim at the state and the architectural profession, claiming that the contemporary prison is a product of "political timidity and architectural stagnation" (Jewkes & Moran 2017, p. 13). This claim still holds currency today.

The chapter sets out the historical context of prison architecture in how it remains a political aesthetic of perceived public sentiment. If this remains the same today in the "warehouse" aesthetic of the politically timid and architecturally stagnant designs, then it is suggested that adopting another country's approach to prison design would be a quantum shift in a government's approach and attitude to justice. One that would likely require a massive engagement with society to bring the public along with the new direction. The authors' argument of "build it and they will come" is worrying. While they make the argument that positive attitudes will evolve through the influence of humane custodial architecture being realised through rehabilitation and increased desistance, the timidity of governments reflects broader societal attitudes and the assumption that the media and public want punitive outcomes for the incarcerated, and that this must be complied with at all times (Brown & Wilkie 2002, pp. xx-xxi).

The inclusion of designing architects in the planning process may be a source of optimism, but the issue in commercial design practice is it has little agency to act beyond its role of designing to the client brief (Consoli 2012). There is little opportunity for commercial architects to be at the 'visioning' stage of the project (Baggio et al. 2018, p. 87). Jewkes and Moran set the catalyst to take initiative to explore alternative approaches to custodial design beyond the confines of existing procurement structures. This is not an easy task for any architect. The risk of forfeiting design fees to pursue alternative design practice is not a thing in custodial architecture for many reasons. This highlights the opportunity in addressing this in an independent practice-led study by a practicing architect. The study offers relatively low risk in terms of 'standing out' from the architectural pack and there is certainly no commercial design fees at risk.

1.10 CONCLUSION

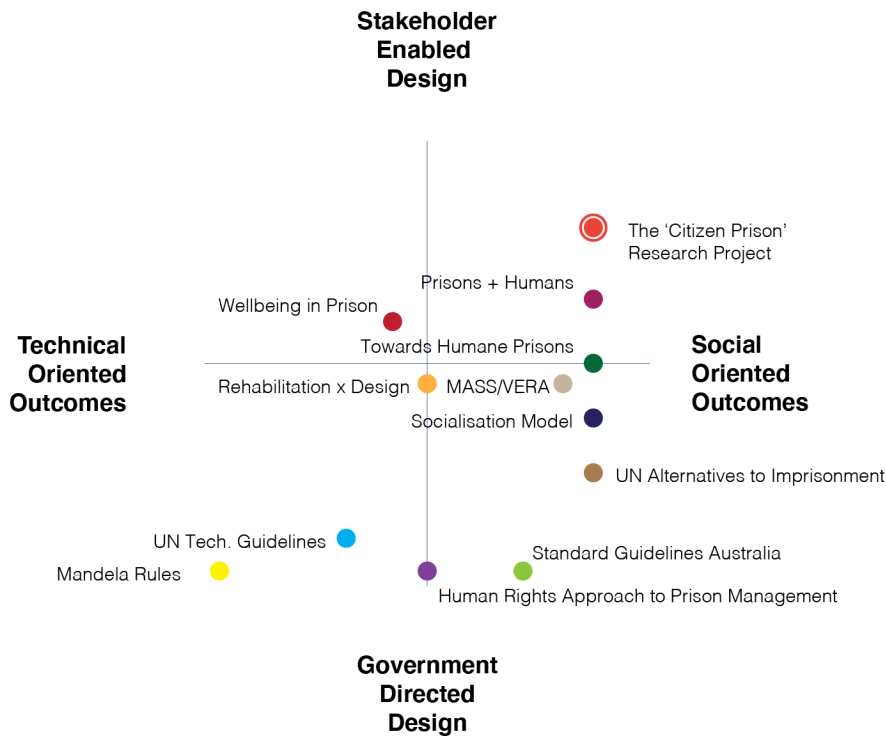


Figure 1-16. Research orientation to the spectrum of reviewed practice and literature

Figure 1-16 locates this study against other publications in the field of custodial design. The purpose of this section was to examine and compare the research project against other entities in practice and literature. It is apparent that approximately half of the 'literature' have similar objectives in addressing social oriented outcomes. They predominately are non-government publications that have taken the initiative to be speculative towards a vision of future prison design which is similar to the intent of this study. The point of difference between socially oriented literature and this study's is the inclusion of lived-experience as an engaged part of the design process to envision new futures. This is evidenced by it being higher on the scale of 'stakeholder enabled design' than the comparable literature.

The greatest contrast between this study and government generated literature is their higher focus of technical and institutional directed design outcomes. The outstanding comparison between one that would have thought would have a natural correlation with this study is the Mandela rules. It transpires the Mandela Rules and this study are almost completely opposite to each other in the context of social outcomes and stakeholder design. The technical standards approach and apparent problem with these types of international rules is picked up by the ICRC, and a

catalyst for the publication of 'Towards Humane Prisons', '...the development of these international laws (Mandela Rules) and standards has generally remained detached from the design of the physical infrastructure in which they should be implemented: the prison building itself' (Baggio et al. 2018, p. 34). In effect, the rules are considered the minimum standards and there is a lot of scope for those that commission prisons to interpret those standards in function, aesthetics, and material palette.

Chapter 2: Research Design

2.1 THE DESIGN

2.1.1 Introduction

As with all research projects, the Research Design section is pivotal to articulating how the study's purpose will be achieved and the associated strategies employed (Patton 1990, p. 36). The design first articulates the inquiry paradigm (Patton 1990, p. 37) and then sets out the assumptions that underpin it, what knowledge is being generated, and how the researcher intends for the reader to regard the outcomes (Crotty 1998, p. 2). This 'research design' is particularly significant as it is a practice-led study and does not easily fit with traditional forms of research enquiry (Costanza-Chock 2020; Hamilton & Jaaniste 2009).

Patton notes that, over time, two methodological paradigms in conducting research have emerged: 1 — logical positivism, which uses quantitative and experimental methods to test hypothetical-deductive generalisations, and 2 — phenomenological inquiry; using qualitative and naturalistic approaches to inductively and holistically understand human experience in context-specific settings (Patton 1990, p. 37). This research falls in the latter paradigm with its social enquiry into the human experience of the prison in the context of citizenship. Situated in architectural practice, the objective of its design is to leverage practice-led mechanisms used by designers to interpret a phenomenon through textual and visual interpretation of diverse cohort viewpoints (Costanza-Chock 2020; Hamilton & Jaaniste 2009).

A practice-led thesis has a material influence on how we want the reader to regard the outcomes. New design knowledge is articulated through design practice methods of visualisation of future worlds (Foqué 2010; Manzini et al. 2015) and a methodology is developed to facilitate this in the following sections. Design and methodology are the outputs of the thesis, but should not be considered as the final product of the study, rather, as a means to begin to think about the possibilities for architecture through design and practice (Moran, Jewkes & Lorne 2019, p. 75). The aim is to bridge the social gap in how prisons serve society and how this manifests in their design procurement. This thesis should be read as a starting point for future socially engaged custodial design practice.

Crotty (1998, p. 1) observes of social research that methods, methodologies, and theoretical underpinning are often unclear in how they relate. The practice-led nature of this research means that it has a lot of moving parts that contribute to new social knowledge about prison design. Noting Crotty's position on the "maze" of social research, the following parts to this Research Design chapter follow his four-

element “scaffolding” (ibid 1998, pp. 2-9) to organise and articulate the methodology and the intended outcomes of the research.

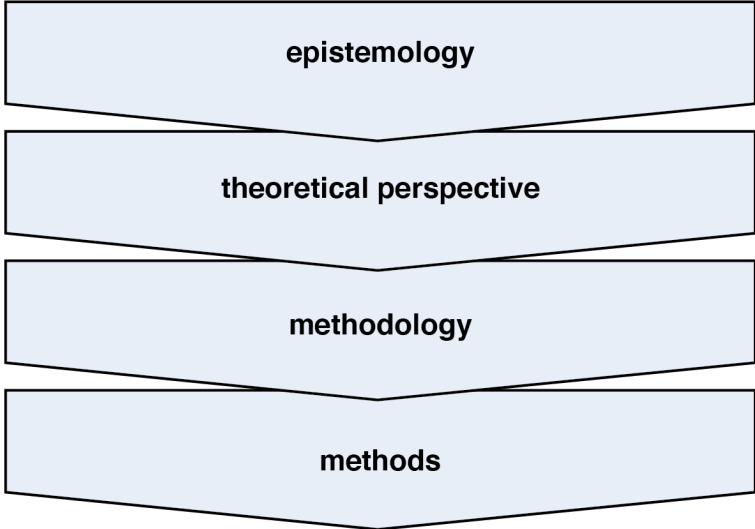


Figure 2-1. Crotty's 'Scaffold' Four Elements of Social Research. (Crotty 1998, p. 4)

In each part of the scaffold, alternatives to the methods or theoretical perspectives chosen will be discussed briefly to clarify why each was chosen and its unique contribution to the whole. The final section discusses the research design as a whole and provides a model diagram of the structure as it is designed for the purposes of examining the topic and answering the research questions.

2.1.2 Epistemology: (Social) Constructionism

The intention of this research (as outlined in the previous chapter) is to explore a different path in how prisons are conceptualised and to realise new design knowledge by following that path. Historically, prison design procurement involves a government justice agency articulating their requirements for a new prison facility to the construction industry and it being designed by a cohort of design consultants (UNOPS 2016, p. 10). This research investigates what a prison could look and function like if a stakeholder cohort with life experience in prison environments were to articulate the requirements of a new prison facility, or part, rather than the justice agency’s external vision of the prison.

As argued by Maurer at the start of this thesis; prisons have impact on thousands of people over their life span (Baggio et al. 2018, p. 16). It is difficult as an architect to conceive the notion that an environment can be designed for people that will likely be of economic and social background mostly unfamiliar to the designer other than as a “category” or “risk/need type” articulated by the justice agency. Compounding this is the notion that those that will experience the environment will have no input to the design. This disconnectedness of custodial design and existential knowledge sets the epistemological markers for this research. The knowledge being sought and constructed is social (being about citizenship) and

extends to the viewpoint of the participants of their own circumstances, and the impact on the people they know (family, friends, other prisoners). The knowledge to be constructed is the making of meaning from multiple participants about past, immediate, and future notions of a social question.

Combined with the social nature of the research questions, Crotty's explanation of constructionism as "The making of meaning" (Crotty 1998, p. 42) is that "all knowledge, therefore meaningful reality as such, is contingent upon human practices, being constructed in and out of interaction between human beings and their world, and developed and transmitted within an essentially social context". He explains that constructionism holds that meanings are constructed by human beings as they engage with the world they are interpreting (ibid 1998, p. 43). It is this collective meaning making from across the varied participant stakeholder cohort that makes this practice-led research unique, as it takes an alternative path to conceptualising custodial environments from a government narrative, but one that is informed from life experience. In a social constructionist approach, this research generates knowledge by questioning architecture and the social meanings attached to it (Crotty 1998, p. 58).

It is at this point that we need to clarify whether the epistemological basis for this enquiry is either constructionist or constructivist. They sound similar, and as an epistemology, both have the intent to "make sense (or interpret) the meanings others have about the world" (Creswell & Poth 2016, p. 26; Crotty 1998). The application of the terms is relevant when considering whose meaning contributes to the type of knowledge that we seek. This research seeks to capture the views of a diverse stakeholder group that all have lived experience and are aware of the impact of the prison environment. The intention is to gather these views, bring them to a common viewpoint, and then conceptualise the viewpoints through design scenarios of the "collective mind". Crotty clarifies how this socially collective knowledge sits in either the constructivist or constructionist camp: "It would appear useful, then, to reserve the term *constructivism* for epistemological considerations focussing on 'the meaning making of the individual mind' and to use *constructionism* where the focus includes 'the collective generation [and transmission] of meaning'" (Crotty 1998, p. 58). Thus, constructionism is the epistemological basis of the research. As Crotty further argues, 'Social constructionism emphasises the hold our culture has on us: it shapes the way we see things (even the way we feel things!) and gives us a quite definite view of the world" (ibid).

Epistemological Boundaries

With constructionism as the epistemological basis to examine social meaning, it is imperative to define the field, rather than leaving it open. To articulate the field, I return to Merleau-Ponty's (Perez-Gomez 2016, p. 146) 'soccer player' analogy mentioned earlier; the field is the known boundaries, and the players in their

playmaking change the nature and meaning of what is being observed. In this research, the field is the prison with its shared understanding that it has a social function. The players are not the government, but citizens. The design of the game (this research) is different to other games because it allows citizen players to contribute to the game, and in *their* playmaking develop unique understandings of the (prison) field. It is important to note at this point that the metaphor of the prison as the field in no way suggests that the research sees the prison as an indefinite thing. Rather, the position taken aligns with the sentiments in the “Foreword” to the book *Towards Humane Prisons* published by the International Committee of the Red Cross (ICRC), where the President, Peter Maurer, notes that prisons will continue to be built in many places around the world; similarly, this research looks to contribute positively to current and future design practice of custodial environments as long as they are seen as a thing that serves society.

2.1.3 Theoretical Perspective: Interpretivism – Phenomenology

Put simply and directly, phenomenological enquiry focuses on the question: “What is the structure and essence of experience of this phenomenon for these people?” (Patton 1990, p. 69)

Having established that the research relies on existential stakeholder experience to inform prison design in the context of citizenship, the next component in Crotty’s (1998) scaffold is to outline the theoretical perspective of the research. Drawing again on Merleau-Ponty’s analogy of field/players to illuminate how a prison is understood, the theoretical perspective relies on a collective voice to contribute to new knowledge about the prison. The focus of engaging with multiple voices (Patton 1990, p. 69) is “how we put together the phenomena we experience in such a way as to make sense of the world and, in so doing, develop a world view”. For this research, the approach is to seek diverse existential viewpoints (Costanza-Chock 2020; Harding 2004) from those that are directly impacted by or have a significant interest in prison environments. These viewpoints are gathered by engaging directly with people who have this experience and documenting their views on citizenship and prisons. Important to note here is that the research seeks out the participant views specifically about the prison in a particular context (citizenship and architecture) rather than seeking out general day to day experiences of citizenship and architecture.

The notion of citizenship is almost entirely subjective due to its lack of technical grounding (in Australia) (Rubenstein & Lenagh-Maguire 2014, p. 27) and is completely open to individual interpretation. It is not possible for the research to achieve definitive phenomenological study of individual accounts of what citizenship *is* in custodial architecture. Buckmaster & Thomas (2009) argue for an alternative to ‘citizenship’ that is socially inclusive and recognises a wider notion of citizen identity that goes beyond the self and towards others. This broader understanding of

citizenship is adopted in this research to mean that being a citizen extends beyond the individual and is the foundation of the enquiry. This broader perspective allows for people to discuss their views on how the prison impacts on the notion of social citizenship, particularly when it relates to their loved ones.

Patton (1990, p. 71) makes a critical delineation between “phenomenological study” and “phenomenological perspective” that has implications for this study. The phenomenological study relies on descriptions of “what people experience and how it is they experience what they experience”. Clearly, the phenomenological study does not fit with the research’s theoretical perspective of a shared social understanding, and so the phenomenological perspective fits with the methodology of the research. As Patton (ibid 1990) argues, “one can employ a general phenomenological perspective to elucidate the importance of using methods that capture people’s experience of the world without conducting [a] phenomenological study that focusses on the essence of a shared experience”. It feels like we are splitting hairs, but the takeaway is that a phenomenological perspective (rather than study) allows for richer and wider understandings of “social citizenship” that go beyond the prison walls. The phenomenological perspective proved useful when the interview participants spoke of their loved ones experiences of the prison environment.

To conclude this section, a phenomenological perspective allows for a wide understanding of social citizenship as it applies to the individual and beyond, through relationship and connections into society. Developing a range of perspectives on citizenship and architecture affords design practice space to develop concepts and alternatives that have social significance, whereas a study would be far more limiting in its scope — that’s if a phenomenological study on citizenship were indeed possible.

An alternative interpretive theoretical perspective that would seem to have an ideal fit with the research, given that it is about architecture and “human thought, emotions, and conduct” is symbolic interactionism (Crotty 1998, p. 4; Smith & Bugni 2006, p. 124). It does play a part in the research in terms of how designed physical environments contain and communicate our shared symbols and meanings (Smith & Bugni 2006), but it does this when things are in place and not when things are being conceived, or being envisioned without an physical environment too make symbolic interaction observations. It is used within this research at various times as a way of articulating how “socio-cultural phenomena influence a designed physical environment” (Smith & Bugni 2006, p. 123), but as an overall approach, it relies on the physical environment being already designed; it is possible that it would fit in with the “what works” paradigm of assessing designed built environments (Nadel & Mears 2018, p. 1; Scharff-Smith 2015, p. 38). For this research, this environment exists as a phenomenon — the prison; but the aim of the practice-led research is to develop new design knowledge and so, a constructionist phenomenological

perspective with its potential for conceptualising “future worlds” (Foqué 2010, p. 44) is the primary theoretical perspective.

Of course, conceptualising future worlds does not mean that we have no knowledge of prior worlds, including “the melange of cultures and subcultures into which we are born”, or even the multilayered world that we inhabit at the moment (Crotty 1998, p. 79). To that extent, symbolic interaction does play a role in the phenomenological theoretical perspective when the prison is discussed as a pre-reflective concept in interviews. It facilitates the use of architectural design practices (building typology studies, precedent studies, touring and visiting existing facilities, desktop research, master planning from function briefs) and an a priori meaning of prison/citizenship/punishment to stakeholders. In the framing and intentions of this research design, symbolic interaction has a role in mediating an understanding of humans in social settings and the built environment as they exist, so that, as designers, we can project the future (Crotty 1998, pp. 4, 78; Smith & Bugni 2002).

2.1.4 Methodology: Phenomenological + Visual

So, phenomenology, not unlike poetry, is a poetizing project; it tries an incantative, evocative speaking, a primal telling, wherein we aim to involve the voice in an original singing of the world.

((Merleau-Ponty, 1973) in van Manen 1990, p. 13) *Researching Lived Experience: Human Science for an Action Sensitive Pedagogy*

Phenomenological Method

A phenomenological perspective or, collective social understanding of something that is known (pre-reflective) but being explored anew (Crotty 1998, p. 97), is viewed by Durkheim as a form of “sociological fact”; “it is general because it is collective, and certainly not collective because it is general ... it is to be found in each part because it exists in the whole, rather than the whole because it exists in the parts” (Durkheim 1964, p. 9). It is not feasible for this research to claim a universal social fact about citizenship and prison (nor does it intend to); rather, as in the previous section, it claims a phenomenological perspective of the topic of citizenship and prison design from which to project future worlds. As Patton (1990, p. 69) argues, “There is no separate (or objective) reality for people. There is only what they know their experience is and means. The subjective experience incorporates the objective thing and a person’s reality”. Or, as Creswell & Poth (2016, p. 75) put it, “Phenomenology describes the common meaning for several individuals of their lived experience of a concept or a phenomenon”. They further note (p. 78), “Phenomenology is not only a description, but is an interpretative process in which the researcher makes an interpretation of the meaning of the lived-experiences”.

Subsequently, the methods employed by the researcher to interpret and describe are key to a phenomenological study.

Van Manen provides an overview of the nature of the knowledge of a phenomenological study that can be expected by the observer:

From a phenomenological point of view, we are less interested in the factual status of particular instances: whether something actually happened, how often it tends to happen, or how the occurrence of an experience is related to the prevalence of other conditions or events. — The essence or nature of an experience has been adequately described in language if the description reawakens or shows us the lived quality and significance of the experience in a fuller or deeper manner. (van Manen (1990, p. 8)

Van Manen argues that phenomenology is fundamentally a “writing activity” (van Manen 1990, pp. 7, 13) and encourages us to engage in language to discover “what lies at the ontological core of our being”. For van Manen, words are the essential medium of communication; but for the architect, our practice is visualising through drawing as a “phenomenology of practice” (Creswell & Poth 2016, p. 75). In the act of visualising and sharing knowledge, the architect becomes an active participant rather than a theoretical observer (van Manen 1990, p. 8), which influences the phenomenological approach in this (and future) practice.

There are two approaches to phenomenology that are compatible with this research: “hermeneutic” or “transcendental”, of which one was selected and applied (Creswell & Poth 2016, pp. 77-8). For either approach, “lived experience” is common across all phenomenological studies (Creswell & Poth 2016, p. 75). The difference between the two approaches is the relationship of the researcher and what is being interpreted. The hermeneutic approach (Van Manen in Creswell & Poth 2016, p. 77) is oriented towards the researcher’s interpretation of a particular context (Seamon 2017a), whereas the transcendental is “focussed less on the researcher and more on the description of the participants” (Moustakas in Creswell & Poth 2016, p. 78). The transcendental approach has a key fit with the research methodology in two ways. Rather than enabling a narrow or deep study, it focuses on meaning that emerges from the diverse life experiences of participants from within and outside the prison in the context of citizenship. Secondly, It recognises that the researcher and the participants have different schemata (Rapoport 1990, pp. 15-6) and neutralises the bearing of the architect/researcher’s views on the process, leaving open the capacity to apply design practices that visualise phenomena in a “disinterested” state (Hamilton & Jaaniste 2009, p. 5). With these two specific features of transcendental phenomenology, Moustakas’s simplified approach, set out in Creswell & Poth (2016, p. 201) will be the primary reference for the

qualitative/phenomenological methods in this research, leading to the visualisation of the emergent concerns from the participants.

Visualising method - Scripts

Visualising matters of concern is a pivotal design task for the future.

(referring to Latour Stephan 2015, p. 202)

The aim of the visualisation is to bring to bear the skills of the professional architect to visualising the concerns of the participant group through the use of scripts to conceptualise future worlds (Foqué 2010). As a singular research project, the visualisation of the scripts signals the cross-over point from a qualitative study to a practice-based study, where the qualitative informs the practice-based component. In the context of this study methodology, 'scripts' are one of the contributions to new knowledge about custodial design in the context of citizenship.

It should be noted that a transcendental phenomenological research project requires the researcher to remove themselves from the interpretation as much as they can so that the participants' views can be realised (Creswell & Poth 2016, p. 201). The research enquiry centres on the prison through the lived experience of the participants and not how it is imagined by the architect. It is imperative that the visualisations and scripts have a clear articulation of each other and participants are able to recognise this connection. It is also important to maintain the context of the discussions and not blue-sky design and lose connection with the phenomenological perspective. Recalling Merleau Ponty's soccer players on the field (the field being the prison), Cross best describes this approach to design visualisation:

In creative design, it is not necessary that such a radical shift of perspective has to occur in order to identify a "creative leap" ... creative design is not necessarily the making of a sudden "contrary" proposal, but is the making of an "apposite" proposal. Once the proposal is made, it is seen to be an apposite response to the given, and explored, problem situation. Cross (2006, pp. 43-4)

Any number of apposite designs can be visualised as a heuristic activity and as such, there is no one design — or any number of designs that will exhaust the meaning from the phenomenological component. The heuristic use of combining scripts to develop design concepts are "hypotheses in action" that aligns with Foqué (2010, p. 45) approach: "a design hypothesis can be adapted, converted, adjusted, and replaced during testing without being deemed true or false. This is why several hypotheses can exist next to each other at the same time". That is, while the phenomenological methods applied in pure qualitative research may arrive at structural and textural descriptions of the phenomenon (Creswell & Poth 2016, p.

201), the design concepts that this research generates are not prescriptive or fixed, but are most importantly, the point where a conversation about the future starts. Not when the 'research' ends.

'And that is why, when you listen to a presentation of a phenomenological nature, you will listen in vain for the punch-line, the latest information, or the big news. As in poetry, it is inappropriate to ask for a conclusion or a summary of a phenomenological study.' (van Manen 1990, p. 13)

The value of the design concepts in this research is they represent the concerns of those that have an existential interest in prison. They bring to the centre, those that normally find themselves on the periphery or indeed, not heard at all (Farrelly 2021). Further, they are an articulation of a collective input is the basis for 'visioning' future socially responsive environments.

2.1.5 Four Part Method: Interpretive Enquiry, Design, Sharing, Discussing

This section sets out the methods of the research. There are five parts to the research methodology which are outlined initially, and then expanded on. The individual method components are drawn from several other methodologies (see references) and are brought together as the 'The Collective Methodology' that transitions the qualitative/phenomenological to design visualisations and a reflexive conclusion:

- Part 1 - Interpretive Enquiry: The phenomenological study - Qualitative methods for sourcing and interpreting cross-social participant data responses to the research topic and questions through the application of a script mechanism (Creswell & Poth 2016, p. 201; Latour 2004; Stephan 2015)
- Part 2 - Design: employing design-oriented scenarios as an articulation of the interpretive enquiry (Manzini et al. 2015, pp. 129-32). These design-oriented scenarios are a second contributor to new custodial design knowledge.
- Part 3 - Sharing: exhibiting the designs to share/validate the research output – offering our findings as interpretation and inviting people to weigh our interpretation and judge whether it has been soundly arrived at, plausible, and might have application to their interests and concerns (Crotty 1998, p. 41).
- Part 4 – Proposition for a social embedded knowledge practice model for custodial design.

- Part 5 - Discussion: a reflexive discussion on the new design knowledge about custodial design with respect to the research overall and projections of future issues for various aspects of phenomenological design practice and the model (Creswell & Poth 2016, p. 261; Wolcott 1990, p. 136).

Part 1 – Qualitative: Interpretive Enquiry

The following provides an overview of the Interpretive Enquiry components of the research (Creswell & Poth 2016, pp. 81, 201 Table 4.3; Stephan 2015, p. 218). There are four parts to the research methodology which are outlined below, and then expanded on:

- Describe the researchers own personal experience with the phenomenon under study. This mechanism situates the researcher to the phenomenon and sets aside the researcher's personal experiences so the focus can be directed to the participants in the study
- Develop a list a list of significant statements about how the participants experience the phenomenon and provide textural descriptions
- Group the significant statements into broader units of information – 'Composite Descriptions'. These describe the 'essence' of the 'phenomenon' that are held across the participant cohort.
- Scripts. 'Translations' - A combination of 'composite descriptions' that are related to the prison environment.

The researcher

My personal experience with the phenomena is that I am a 'citizen' that is generally concerned for societal wellbeing. Whilst I hold this concern within a broad context (offshore detention, public funding rorts without consequence, selling off of water resources, demolition of sacred First Nation's sites (again with negligible consequence), climate change, institutional support for fossil fuels, black deaths in custody, and a media monopoly that views its role as influencing political agenda, it is the culmination of all these things that appears to be stratifying society into three societal groups; the powerful/influential, the bulk of society, and those that are not welcome. Those that are not welcome include people on the street, people that do not fit in or show traits of the 'other' (sexuality, gender, age, mental health, economic fragility, access to housing, substance dependency), people that are trying to make it to this country (but do not align with the 'Australian' ideal), those that are detained offshore (outsourced to private contractors), and prisoners. Bauman (2000) argues that contemporary society exhibits increasing anxiety towards the 'other' and governments that are worried about negative public and media sentiment with the use of mass incarceration reinforce this mind set (Brown & Wilkie 2002, p. xx).

At the outset of this PhD, my personal experience with the phenomena of citizenship and prison design was both personal and professional having been part of several research projects in custodial settings. My observations from these projects formed into a view on social division and how this manifest in custodial design was the impetus to undertake the study. Recent social movements – BLM, Me Too, Climate Change, and Defund the Police with their challenge to established power by questioning their part in the administration of social functions has reinforced the questioning of the accepted procurement methods of prison design being the voice of the government. My personal view is prisons are a social function that have a mandate to positively contribute to societal wellbeing. My professional view is prisons have an impact on the individuals (and their families) and the role of architecture is to acknowledge and support the human condition. This means that it is necessary for prison design to incorporate the viewpoints and concerns of those that are impacted (Costanza-Chock 2020, pp. 6-7) along with the a further need to establish procurement methodologies to facilitate the existential viewpoint.

Significant Statements

The significant statements are found in the data sourced from the participants interview transcripts. They are thematically grouped participant statements on the experience of the topic (Creswell & Poth 2016, p. 201). They are organised in a direct thematic grouping method (Hsieh & Shannon 2005, p. 1277) ‘social citizenship’, ‘justice’, and ‘architecture’.

Thematic Grouping – ‘Composite Descriptions’

This part groups the significant statements into broader units of information - ‘composite descriptions’ (Creswell & Poth 2016, p. 81). These descriptions are the thematic grouping of concerns about the research topic of citizenship and the prison. ‘Concerns’ according to Latour act as attractor for organising and interpreting values, needs, issues, and frames (Stephan 2015, p. 202). As Creswell & Poth (2016) notes, the purpose of these thematic ‘meaning units’ provide the foundation for interpretation (ibid, p. 201) and will be utilised in the next stage ‘scripting’.

Seeing as: Scripting

‘Can we devise another powerful descriptive tool that deals this time with matters of concern and whose import then will no longer be to debunk but to protect and to care...?’. (Latour 2004, p. 232)

The term ‘script’ is adopted from Stephan (2015) ‘matters of concern’ approach. They are a mechanism employed here to interpret one or more composite descriptions. They articulate cross-cohort concerns about the research topic and prison design. Scripts, are a vehicle to transition collective concerns to design visualisation (Stephan 2015). In combination with the ‘design-oriented scenarios’,

they are one part to the contribution to new design knowledge from this study about citizenship and prison.

Part 2 – Practice: Design

The purpose of the design-oriented scenarios (both visual and textual) aligns with Yee (2010) as being 'firstly a reflection and exploration tool; second, as an analysis and knowledge generation tool; third, as a communication, facilitation and discussion tool'. A design-oriented scenario (Manzini et al. 2015) may be a combination of scripts, that together relate to concerns for part/whole of the prison or function. Combined with 'scripts', design-oriented scenarios are the other part to the contribution to new design knowledge from this study about citizenship and prison.

'Design-oriented scenarios' are a method of interpretation that are the culmination of this phenomenological study. They represent a hypothesis of the essence of concerns that the participants have towards the prison. These concerns relate to the meaning of citizenship and justice towards the prison. It must be noted that the design-oriented scenarios are just that, 'scenarios' that are textual and visual representations of an interpretation. They are there to be shared and, in practice, be adapted, converted, even replaced. They are never 'true' or 'false' – several scenarios/hypothesis can exist next to each other (Foqué 2010, p. 45). Whilst, in this research they are a practice-led vehicle to articulate the qualitative findings, in future design practice, they would likely have a much longer and involved life depending on the number of stakeholders, the level of contestability of the topic, and if the methods involved more collaborative design engagement with stakeholders as co-designers.

Part 3 – Practice: Sharing

Sharing in this research is a method to disseminate and validate the interpretation of the data as design concepts (Crotty 1998, p. 41). The research faced a number of issues in the dissemination and validation: Firstly, the assumption that citizenship and the prison resides in the social consciousness and any research output should be made publicly available even if it might not be a popular topic, nor any appetite to enter a discourse about prison design (Brown & Wilkie 2002, pp. xx-xi).

Another issue is the limited opportunity to share the findings and concepts with the original participants of the research. Whilst there was an intention to share with the original participants, this became problematic as people move from one location to another over the time of the research. Another factor is prison research activity relies on the generosity of the staff and others of the prisons visited. Getting access is a privilege and return visits were not practical.

An alternative method was devised to share the research design-oriented scenarios publicly on the internet with its dedicated webpage and feedback form. Opening up the findings via web exhibition to the general public provides credibility as a society-engaged member checking mechanism for the research (Creswell & Poth 2016, p. 261)

Part 5 – Model for Future Practice

The model offered in this part is a formalisation of the methodology developed in the study. Its objective is to facilitate custodial design with collaborators that have lived experience knowledge. Additional to the model is its situating in a global understanding of custodial facility procurement as a contribution to design practice.

Part 5 - Discussion

The discussion section concludes the study. It takes a reflexive approach (Creswell & Poth 2016, pp. 227-8) on the research as a method and outcome. The chapter concludes with a discussion on the potential of phenomenological, practice-led methods for future architectural practice.

2.1.6 The Research Model

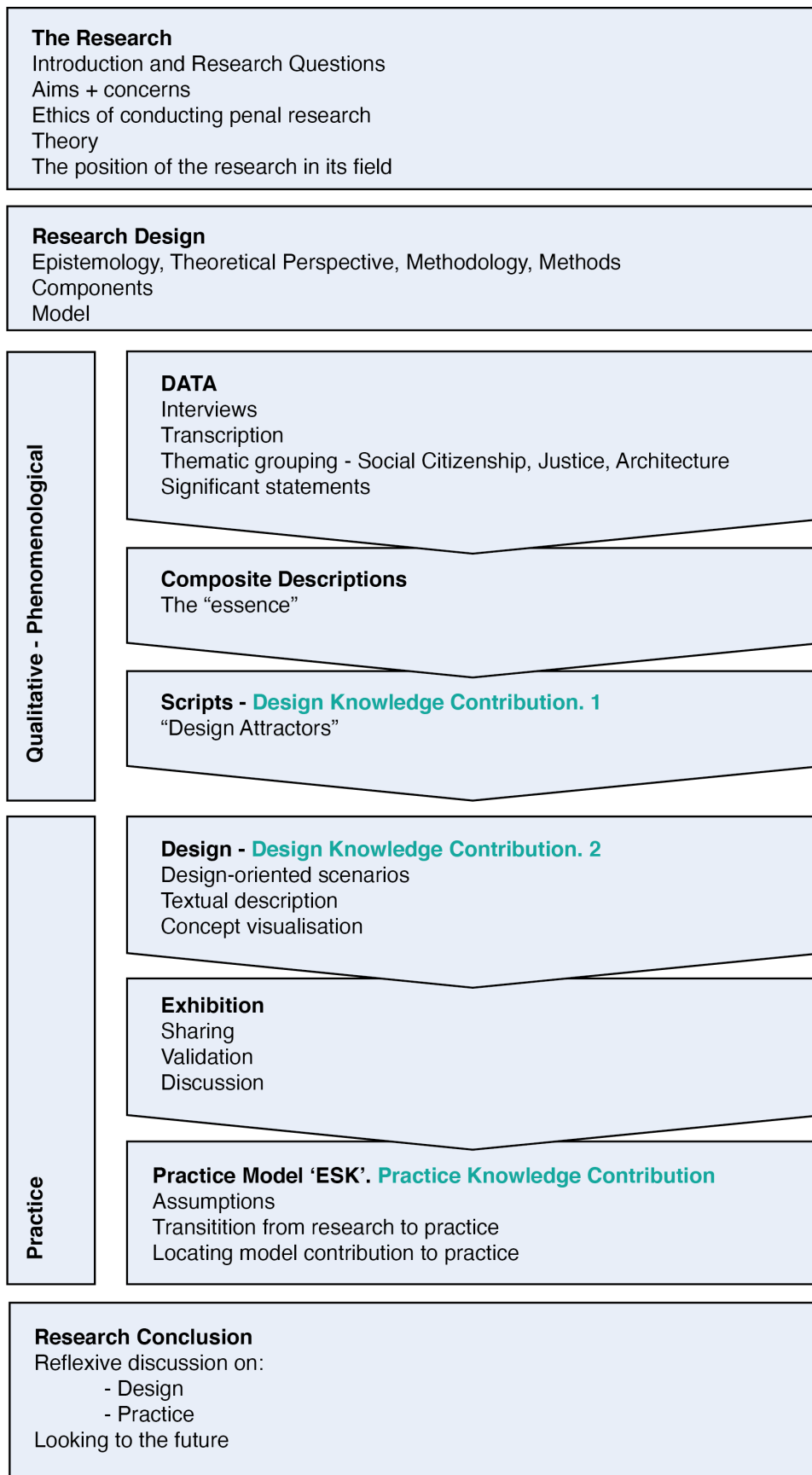


Figure 2-2. Research Design Model - 'The Collective Method'

2.2 THE RESEARCH COMPONENTS

The following section outlines and details the logistical aspects of the research.

2.2.1 The Practice and PhD Program

The following diagram provides a timeline of this PhD project (blue shading) and a selection of other projects, writing, and teaching from the author's design, research, and practice activity with DOC at UTS leading into and during the PhD.

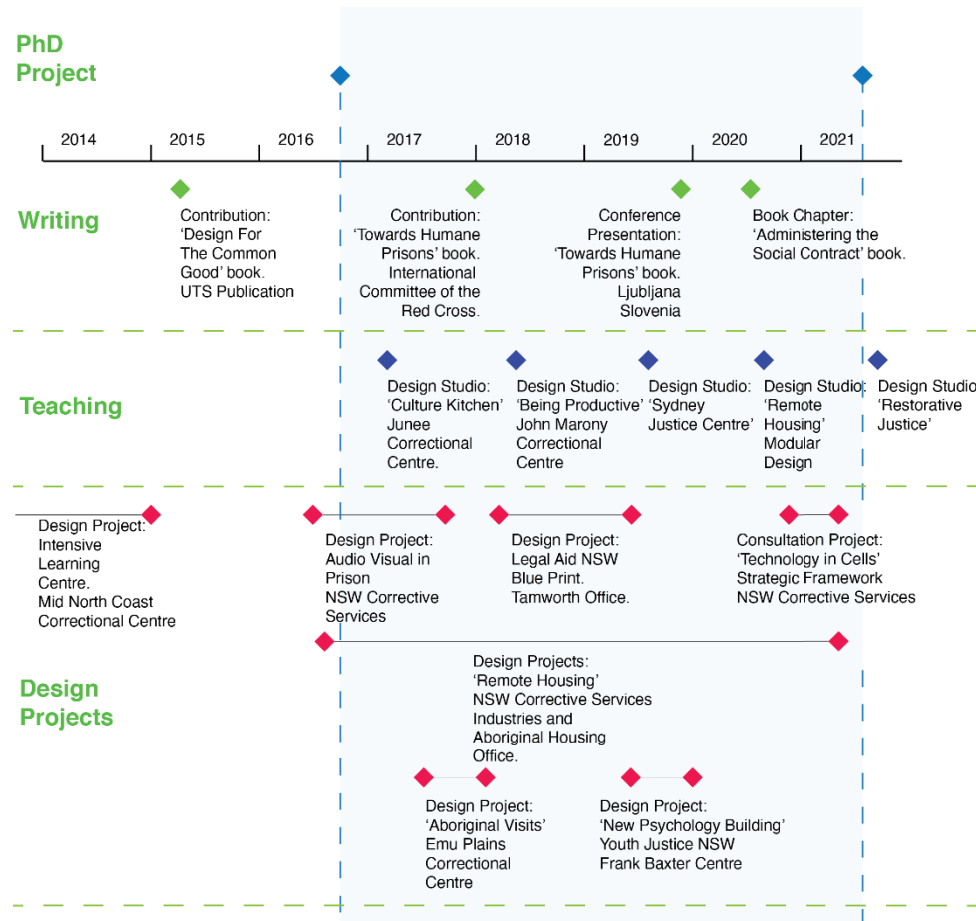


Figure 2-3. The PhD project and Design Research Practice

2.2.2 Research Management

People

In total there were 36 participants. The following table indicates the breakdown of this cohort.

Location	Participant type	Number of Participants
CC1	Prisoner	3
CC1	Staff	4
CC2	Prisoner	6
CC2	Staff	5
CC3	Prisoner	9
CC3	Staff	4
External	Public	5
Total		36

Table 2-1 Research Participants

Interviews were audio recorded with participants permission. Participants were supplied with information and consent forms before the interviews began. The interviews were conducted over two days at each centre – one day for staff and the next for prisoner interviews. The number of participants interviewed was subject to availability of prisoners or staff on the day of the visits. This was also influenced by the operational characteristics of the prison. CC1 has short operational days whereas, CC3 is significantly longer, and this is reflected in the number of interviews made possible by the operations of the day

Initially it was intended to interview up to 15 external participants. The approach was to interview participants from the general public. In developing this idea, it became apparent early that a ‘general public’ cohort would be too random with their responses from assumed understandings of prison life based mostly on what is in the media (Brown & Wilkie 2002). A plan for a smaller selection of external participants that represented varying/competing interests in the prison world was developed to align with the experiential requirements of a phenomenological study (Creswell & Poth 2016). This group represented various government agencies, design/construction professionals, and prisoner advocates. The external participant cohort was expected to provide richer, and directly relevant data for the purposes of this stage of the research (Creswell & Poth 2016).

In terms of selection of the size of the sample, consideration was made to the degree of reliable knowledge that reflects a range of perspectives across the entire cohort. The number of participants for interviews is considered to be sufficient to inform an understanding of the research problem and central phenomenon of the study (Creswell & Poth 2016, p. 158). Validation of the design scripts or hypotheses were exhibited as an publicly accessible online exhibition.

Place

Rather than creating visualisations without context or in a 'blue-sky' manner, this research employs a semi-fictional site as a canvas for the design scenarios. Utilising a semi-fictional site follows Cross' (2006, pp. 43-4) approach of the 'apposite proposal' where the creative-leap is developed in a 'given and explored problem situation' being the prison as it is known.

The following plan is based on an existing correctional facility in NSW.

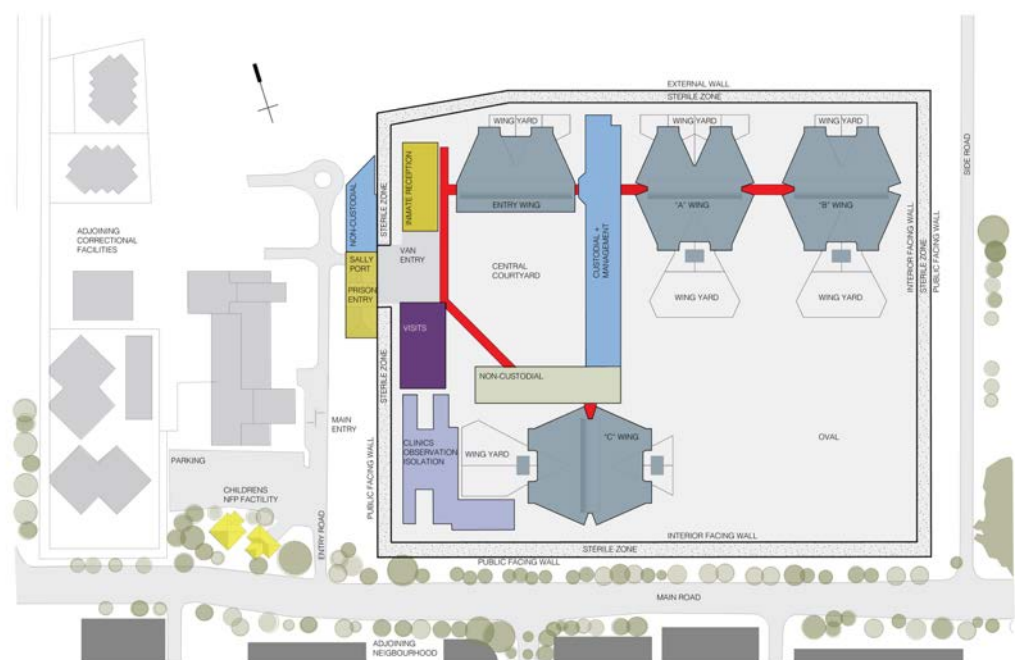


Figure 2-4. Research Test Site

Approval to reference this site was given by Corrective Services NSW (approval letter in Appendices). As part of the research, the intention was to visit the site to become familiar with its spatial and functional organisation. COVID 19 prevented this visit and a desktop construction of the site was done based on readily available satellite imagery and the researchers familiarity of correctional facilities functions and organisation. It is not suggested that this is how the site actually

operates and as such, the site is fictional for the purposes of the creating the visualisations.

2.2.3 Ethics

Government approvals

Approval '18.2504' from Corrective Services NSW to carry out the research in three Correctional Centres was given after an initial delay. This approval took approximately six months to secure. As the research progressed, a technique of testing script ideas on an existing correctional centre rather than a completely hypothetical site was formed. This method shift for the second part to use an existing facility (but not identified) as a template facility to visualise the written descriptions of the interpretations was approved by letter in March 2020. The intention was to visit the facility and become familiar with its layout and functions. Unfortunately, this visit was not possible due to the COVID pandemic as visitors were excluded from visiting correctional centres in NSW. An alternative desktop methods was employed desktop method utilising available online maps and knowledge of prison facility organisation. This was reviewed by CSNSW management before the publishing of the online exhibition in August 2020.

All approvals are attached to this document in the Appendices.

University approvals

Approval to engage in qualitative research was provided by the University of Technology Sydney soon after approval was received from CSNNSW. Approval ETH18-2448 is included in the Appendices as are the Participant Information Forms.

Conclusion.

Research management has been consistent with its intent and procedures throughout the project. The selection of the participants aligns with the phenomenological approach to the study. Approvals for ethics were given for the original research design and any incremental changes throughout.

Chapter 3: Qualitative – Phenomenological Study

3.1 THE STUDY INTRODUCTION

3.1.1 Study Aim

The purpose of the research as a practice-led, phenomenological based study is to engage the reader as a fellow participant/practitioner. The type of engagement that the research is hoping is for the reader-participant/practitioner to be drawn into the world of the research and the emergent discoveries. Through an insight to the research and its discoveries, it is hoped that the reader will see their own world anew towards new paths of understanding the connection and meaning of citizenship and prison (Seamon 2000, p. 172). By engaging with the social notion of the meaning of 'citizenship' that everyone has a common association (in being a citizen) and the phenomenon of the 'prison' as a facility with a social function, it is hoped that the essence of the experiences and viewpoints become a thing of contemplation for what could be (Patton 1990, p. 31) in terms of design and how to design with those that experience the impacts of design that is traditionally controlled by the state. This was the catalysts for me at the outset as a practicing architect with the insights afforded to me of the penal world and will continue to be into future practice on other projects.

This section navigates the phenomenological journey from the outset of visiting places where interviews were held, meeting with (a selection of) participants, articulating the raw data of the interviews as 'significant statements', forming larger units of meaning from the statements as 'composite descriptions' and then selecting and combining the composite descriptions as a descriptive mechanism of 'scripting'. Scripts signal the final part of the qualitative component of the study leading onto the practice component of design-oriented scenarios in Chapter 4.

3.1.2 Interviews

The purpose of this section is to give an insight and sense of the environment where the interviews were held and the nature of how they played out and the people involved (Liebling 1999, p. 148). The epistemological approach to semi-structured interviews is one of discovering new knowledge about something with others who are deeply connected with it. The approach aligns with the Brinkmann & Steiner (2018, p. 10) use of the 'Traveller' metaphor. In this the traveller is on a journey to a distant country that leads to a tale to be told on return. The traveller 'wanders' through the landscape entering into conversations with the people encountered. Brinkmann and Steiner note of the 'traveller' interviewer.

'The interview traveller, in line with the original Latin meaning of conversation as '*wandering together with*', walks along with the local inhabitants, asks questions and encourages them to tell their own stories of their lived world' (ibid)

External Participant Interviews

Interviews with the external participants were all undertaken in office settings - either at the place where a participant worked, or in a conference room at The University of Technology Sydney late 2019-2020. The settings are all very similar in nature in terms of function, layout, and material. They ranged in size of capacity of 20 people to the individual within a workplace.

Correctional Centre Interviews

Interviews in correctional centres were all undertaken in 2020. All participants were provided information on the research, with a research information sheet and consent to the interview form to sign. They were all made aware of recording of the interviews and that they could withdraw consent at any time without consequence. The following provides a brief description of the three interview settings in the correctional centres and a sample description of participants. The aim of the settings and participants is to give the reader a sense of place and people (Seamon 2000, pp. 162-3) in this custodial research.

Place

Site CC1. Urban Remand

Interviews with prisoners and staff were conducted over two days in the remand section of the prison. Not all prisoners interviewed were on remand. One was sentenced.

Prisoners were interviewed on the first day in a small meeting room. The room had nothing in it except for a desk and a couple of office chairs. Thankfully it was airconditioned as the day was quite warm and the prisoners that came in for interview were being called from the yard. They were hot and appreciated the lower temperature of the room.

No custodial staff were in the same room as myself and interviewee. The room was close to the officer's office and I assume that they were applying a 'trained-ear' as a way of keeping surveillance. I did not notice whether there was any electronic surveillance and it seemed that the participants didn't notice either.

Custodial management had organised a list of prisoners to be interviewed. Typical of penal research (Beyerns et al. 2015) , and confirmed by management, the selection of prisoner interview participants is selected from a 'trusted' cohort. The

notion of 'trusted' was indicated as management being familiar with the nature of the prisoner. 'Trusted' also related to the "known" prisoner would 'have something meaningful to say'. The selection of prisoners for interview appeared to be a mix of being 'trusted', articulate, and from of various representative cultural backgrounds.

As a general sense, the location and nature of the interview location did not appear to pose any concerns for the participants.

The second day was reserved for interviewing custodial staff. These interviews were held in the same building as the previous interviews with prisoner participants. The location was a small conference room adjacent to the management offices. It had a small conference table with about 6 chairs and some random boxes that appeared to be an overflow of filing or destined for archiving. There was significantly more ambient noise in this location given its proximity to the management offices.

Custodial staff participants were all associated with the remand part of the prison. Their selection was a function of who was rostered on that day and who was available during the shift. Interviews were subject to the day program and were paused at times of muster or ended so they could attend lock up.

Site CC2. Regional Maximum/Medium

Interviews with prisoners and staff were conducted over two days. On both days, the interviews were held in the visitors centre. Staff were interviewed on the first day and prisoners on the second. A custodial officer was present on both days. The person sat at a desk out of physical earshot inside the visitors centre with a computer that had access to the prisoner database.

The visitors centre was a new construction and had been in operation for about one year. It was bright with good natural light. It had high ceilings with acoustic panelling. It had a pool-fenced children's play area and vending machines for 'snacks' and drinks within the centre. There was also a small kitchenette that had a sink and water. One façade was almost entirely glass with a garden outside. Prisoners were tending the garden on both days – weeding.

I sat in the visitors centre on both days and the custodial staff member went to bring participants to the interviews. For staff, there were a number that were aware of the interviews, and others volunteered as one interview finished and the staff member returned to the office and asked if any of their colleagues wanted to attend. In this sense, there was a degree of randomness to the participants interviews as some were prepared, whilst others less so. The mix of staff participants were from programs, custodial and health backgrounds.

The selection of prisoners participant was semi-random. They were all from one wing of a medium security unit. Management presented a number of trusted prisoners. These were prisoner representatives of various cultural groups or the general prisoner representative group. Others appeared to be selected because they had something to say and made staff aware that they wanted to attend. Possibly,

30% were completely random and volunteered to attend when some of the selected participants asked the 'wing' as they returned from the interview if they wanted to attend. This caused some consternation for the supervising custodial staff member, as some prisoners clearly attended out of curiosity. They tended to have a more lively approach to answering in terms of language and body movement during the interview. The attending custodial officer noted that they were checking their files on the computer during the early stages interview to get a sense of any impending issues that might occur. Whilst the interviews with the completely random participants did have a looser, more varied nature to the discourse, they offered an additional insight over the prisoners that had come prepared.

Site CC3. Regional Maximum/Medium

Interviews with prisoners and staff were conducted over two days. Staff were interviewed on the first day and prisoner participants on the second. All staff interviews were held at the location of their work. The nature of the work varied from medical, management, custodial, program. The varied locations for the interviews provided a better insight for the discussion over the other correctional centre locations where the interviews were held in a conference room and visitors centre. Being in the space of work was valuable as the flow of the day was visible during the interviews. At times prisoners would come and ask a question or interact with the staff member. It gave an insight to the nature of the relationship between that person and prisoners. In some interviews, it was apparent that the staff undertook their roles in less-than-ideal conditions – lack of access to natural light, harsh materials, older furniture (though, when mentioned in the interview, they seemed not to care or had a sense of it-is-what-it-is). The other valuable aspect of interviewing staff in their workplace is that for most of the interviews, staff would then offer a tour of their workplace.

The selection of staff participants appeared to be semi-random. As with the other correctional centres, the first 3-4 staff were aware of the interviews and from there, it was a matter of whether someone was available and willing. One staff member declined to be interviewed.

With the exception of two prisoners employed to do general cleaning duties, (commonly referred to as 'sweepers') who were interviewed in small office near management offices, the rest were all interviewed in a visitors centre. This visitors centre was a temporary facility in an existing enclosed sports hall. The selection of participants appeared to be random from the start. They were predominately from medium security. Some prisoners were working in the vicinity and were asked by the overseeing staff member. The first few participants appeared to be aware of the interviews – or saw me walking through the prison and knew something was happening, so were somewhat prepared. The rest were asked if they wanted to attend by the staff member that was overseeing the interviews during the previous interview.

People: A Sample of Prisoner and Staff Interview Participants

The following participant interview anecdotes from the interviews are provided to give an insight, and to evoke a sense of the person to person interaction and what it was like at the time of the interview.

Prisoner.

He was brought in by a custodial staff member and introduced to me. There was a brief discussion between the three of us about who the prisoner was as an introduction. It was apparent that he was selected for the interview by staff because he was liked equally by other prisoners and staff and that he would offer a balanced view of life inside.

He is a first timer and sentenced. He is slight and quietly spoken from an Asian cultural background. Throughout the interview he was quiet, reflective, and seemed happy to talk about his situation in prison. He spoke of his family and how his 'past life' had fractured his relationship with them and found his time in prison an unexpected divergence from the troubles of his previous life. He indicated his 'past-life' as being the reasons for him being in prison. He didn't say what they were, but it was indicated that he had caused his family significant distress. He indicated that this experience in prison was an opportunity for him to get healthy and make amends on the outside.

'I always wanted to escape'

Whilst taking an active approach to his personal wellbeing, he lamented the conditions in which he and others lived. He spoke of cramped conditions and how this impacted on simple day to day life activities (taking turns to sit on the only chair to eat their meals).

'you have to be on your bed. There is no room for both of you to stand'

He worried about the plight of other inmates that were on the 'pills'.

Though he saw prison as being a circuit-breaker from his past life and he valued his own uncoupling of the past, he made it clear that life inside resembled very little to life on the outside.

'There is nothing here that relates to freedom on the outside'

In terms of the reader being able to empathise with life inside, he offered this insight of what is valuable for personal wellbeing and how it feels to be inside:

'You have to be somewhere quiet. You're never anywhere quiet. There is noise and it is constant all through the day and night. There is no quiet here. Quietness is a luxury'

Staff

The participant is a custodial staff member that worked in the wings and yard. He has 10 years custodial experience. His cultural background isn't obvious, and he makes a point of mentioning this. It is something that he notes that he does not share with his colleagues and the prisoners. He lets them guess and doesn't react if they are wrong or right. He says that to engage in this discussion is to allow someone to get an insight into him that is personal. He maintains a buffer between his life outside and inside and this applies to the relationship with his colleagues and prisoners.

He values his role as someone that keeps community safe, both on the outside and inside:

'I'm here to keep the community safe – do my job and make sure everyone goes home safe with me'

He had a significant concern that 'management' had little knowledge of what it is like to be in the yards and wings. His attitude was very much towards the people doing all the difficult person to person work in prisons were not consulted by those that made decisions on behalf of the custodial staff. When the conversation shifted to the design of prisons, his view was of a similar nature. Prisons are designed without proper reference to those that live and work in them.

'I find from my 10 year's experience that people making decisions about what is happening in jail have never worked in jail. The decisions they are making could cost an officer's life – you know – how to run a jail. Come call a muster for six months, come run a wing for six months – then tell me you've made the right decision'

'Have people sitting next to you that have done 10 plus year's experience in prison and say; "what do we think?" Not, what I think. "What do we think?"'

We discussed the possibility of architecture being able to make connection between the custodial environment and society outside. He struggled to see how connection with the outside and inside could be made. For this individual, this was not surprising in how he maintained his own intentional separation of inside and out. This was typical with all the staff interviewed and even for many of the prisoner participants as well. It was important to be either inside or out. You couldn't be a bit of both.

'this isn't the real world. This isn't my world in here. This is an inmate's world - this is their life. This is not my life. This is just my work to complete - As soon as you step through that gate, it's a completely different aura in here, it's all a negative aura. Its not positive. There's nothing positive about this place'

3.1.3 Transcript and Coding Significant Statements

Each interview was recorded with consent. Transcription was undertaken with the assistance of a voice to text transcription service. Transcriptions were then

loaded into NVIVO which is a qualitative data analysis software for thematic coding of the data for analysis Creswell & Poth (2016, p. 213).

Hsieh & Shannon (2005, p. 1277) claim there are three distinct approaches to analysis of research data (content); conventional, direct, or summative. They note that 'all three approaches are used to interpret meaning from the content of text data and hence, adhere to a naturalistic paradigm' (ibid). They argue the difference, choice, and application of one over the others in a study depends on the 'origins of the codes, and threats to trustworthiness' (ibid) of the research findings. In this section we will address the origins of the coding that structures the grouping of the Significant Statements. We will set out a perspective of trustworthiness in the analysis in the next section.

Content was primarily organised under three broad categories that addressed the research questions and custodial architecture. These three primary categories are 'Social Citizenship', 'Justice', and 'Architecture. For data content relating to social citizenship and punishment, conventional analysis was employed as an inductive method affords new insights of the phenomenon of how citizenship is experienced in prison without the researcher having any direct experience (Hsieh & Shannon 2005, p. 1279).

For the category of 'architecture', a direct analysis approach was taken (Hsieh & Shannon 2005, p. 1281). Hirsh and Shannon argue the goal of the direct analysis approach is to 'validate or extend conceptually a theoretical framework or theory' (ibid). The approach allows for reference of 'existing theory or prior research' to inform the analysis. For this research, the categories identified by Fikfak et al. (2015) in 'The contemporary model of prison architecture: Spatial response to the resocialization programme' have been employed as codes for the content analysis.

The knowledge of 'citizenship' and 'justice' was constructed inductively from a zero-knowledge base in terms of how both are experienced by those that are in or are impacted by the prison environment, 'architecture', having a pre-reflective (Crotty 1998, p. 97) aspect shared by both participants and researcher, can be analysed through direct categories of existing theory (Hsieh & Shannon 2005, p. 1281). Moreover, through the inclusive approach of this research with its participant cohort from within as well as outside of the prison, it contributes to the work of Fikfak et al. (2015, p. 29), 'The prisoner's opinion is the obvious dilemma whether it is better to isolate or integrate the facility with the existing built environment (and) still needs to be researched'.

3.1.4 A Note to Reading Significant Statements and Composite Descriptions

Before we start the 'journey' (Brinkmann & Steiner 2018, p. 10) into the topic of citizenship and prison as experienced by the 'controlled', the 'controllers' and the 'onlookers' (Garland 1990, p. 32), it is critical to make clear the researcher's position

on “trustworthiness” or what might be perceived as being a correct interpretation of the data (Seamon 2000, pp. 169-72).

The reading, and interpretation of the Significant Statements and the Composite Descriptions as part of a qualitative study with a phenomenological perspective, such as this one, does not claim a definitive or universal description of citizenship and architecture by the researcher. Rather, the aim is to bring everyone closer to the topic, and in being closer, shift the understanding of it. The intention of this study and the subsequent visualisations is to align with Seamon’s view what a phenomenological study *is*:

‘Ultimately, the most significant test of trustworthiness for any phenomenological study is the relative power to draw the reader into the researcher’s discoveries, allowing the reader to see his or her own world or the world of others in a new, deeper way. The best phenomenological work breaks people free from their usual recognitions and moves them along new paths of understanding’ (Seamon 2000, p. 172).

3.2 SIGNIFICANT STATEMENTS

3.2.1 Overview of the Statements

The following diagram identifies the primary codes used to organise the significant statements. The tables following the diagram outline the secondary codes within the primary coding.

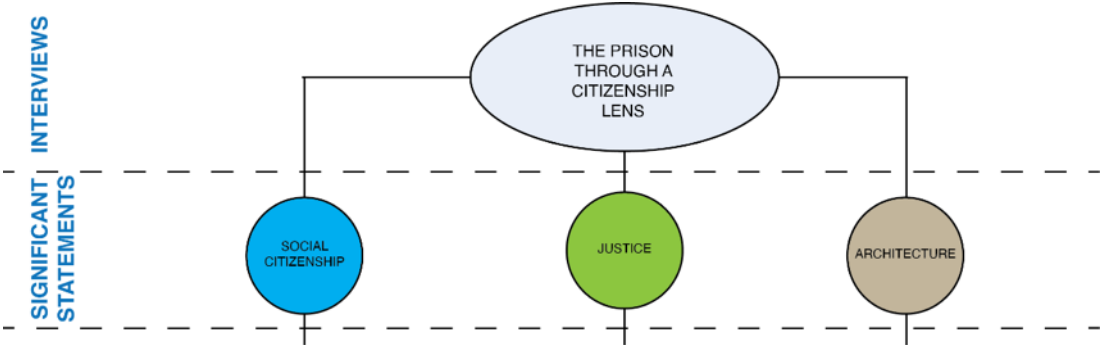


Figure 3-1. Primary Coding

Table 3-1. Social Citizenship Primary and Secondary Code

Social Citizenship
A community member
Lifetime role as a citizen
Institutionalisation
Dignity and self esteem
Family
What is normal?
Purposefulness
Social connectivity
Rehabilitation
Safety

Table 3-2. Justice Primary and Secondary Codes

Justice
Punishment
Collateral punishment

Table 3-3. Architecture Primary and Secondary Codes

Architecture
Location
Spatial concept and design
Appearance of the prison as a whole
Accommodation, cells and blocks
Content and functionality
Diversity of programs
Common spaces

3.2.2 Social Citizenship

A Community Member

Significant in the conversations about ‘citizenship’ the prisoners felt that the physical separation from the outside world was detrimental to their capacity to maintain identity as a member of society. The physical separation caused by the architecture was one aspect spoken about as a recognition that it was there and there for a purpose of keeping separation between the incarcerated and the free society.

Beyond the physical aspects of the architecture, the sense of separation extended to the roles of prisoner/custodial staff/program staff/health staff and how there would never be a time where any person could step out of their prescribed role or have interactions that weren’t determined by their roles. For many of the prisoners, they were acutely aware and viewed their peers were other ‘criminals’ and this was their ‘lot’ for the term of their sentence.

In general, there was a view that separation was needed, but did not contribute to social development of the individual.

‘you can’t be part of society’ [prisoner]

‘If they cut you off completely sort of thing that’s not going to help - either one - it’s not going to help us or help society release the inmates back into it’ [prisoner]

'because if there's walls around all the time you can't imagine yourself outside the walls' [external]

'So, you know you can't participate if you're If you don't know how the system works' [external]

Another view was the effect of prison on the people inside that it conditioned them to be like something less than human with corresponding poor interpersonal and life skills:

'And it's pretty much the same thing as fighting dogs. What they do. They will chuck him in the shed in, in, you know, they'll, they'll feed him raw meat and whatnot. You know what I mean? Not, not, not letting anyone pat the dog, not letting anyone in and just put them in a secured area to become vicious.' [prisoner]

'So, this is pretty much what they're doing to people that come fresh off the street. They're chucking them in a cell. They got no one, they got no one to talk to. They got nothing. You know what I mean? In its either commit suicide or they become even worser people' [staff]

Generally, there was a degree of resigned acceptance about being in the prisoner situation and serving time. For both staff and prisoner, they were focussed on getting on with their sentence or day and returning to society. All of the prisoner participants were concerned about their ability to re-engage with society after having been in the prison environment with the degree of control over their existence. The disconnection with the norms of day-to-day life and the acceptance of 'prison life' was seen by the prisoner participants as one of the things that contributed to the recidivistic cycle.

'the more you are held to an outside standard, the better it is for a person's self-esteem' [prisoner]

'yeah - yeah - lock em up...You know that person's going to get out one day - do you want him to do worse things? You know, like every time I've come out of jail - my crimes have escalated to you know, Yeah. So basically, you've got to remember that bloke is going to come back into society one day and um, do you want him to be better or worse? I know what I'd be choosing' [prisoner]

Custodial staff were conscious of the effects of separation both for the prisoners and themselves. Staff often spoke of the need to maintain and monitor themselves in their relationship with the prisoners. They are in the unique situation where they experience much of what the prisoners do, but then leave at the end of

their shift. Staff spoke about how they maintained distance whilst being professionally friendly whilst they were at work and socially.

'Definitely. You can't mix the two - as soon as you start taking home with our work to home with you and you started bringing home to work with you, you're done' [staff]

'This isn't the real world. This isn't my world in here. This is an inmate's world - this is their life. This is not my life. This is just my work because to complete - As soon as you step through that gate, it's a completely different aura in here, it's all a negative aura. It's not positive. There's nothing positive about this place' [staff]

'I've gone through a lot of different feelings with the inmates. First, I didn't like them, then I hated them, then I can relate to them and now I'm just trying to get on with them' [staff]

External participants naturally contributed to this part of the conversation around being a social citizen from their understanding of what is normally experienced in society and how that might be applied in a penal environment. *this is a double hermeneutic at play as the external participant may or may not have direct life-experience of being in prison, but applies the viewpoint of citizenship to the phenomenon of the prison.

'I think one of the things of citizenship that we don't explore in prisons is this separation of the genders. I think it is so unnatural to have that level of .. here specifically I'm of thinking women – (it) is really unnatural to have that total separation of the genders' [external]

I think the prison is a community as well. So, it's in everyone's interest to have a relaxed community inside jail where people actually doing positive things' [external]

There was a recognition in the conversations that 'citizenship' and 'culture' overlapped in places. Identifying with and practicing a culture or habits of a particular group was also considered as having 'citizenly' attributes of belonging. In recognition of prisons as multicultural spaces and that community is multi-dimensional:

'So, you have a lot of people who are coming from minority groups into prisons and there's a basis there for either developing a multicultural community where people can cook together for

example. What happened to our kitchens? what happened to our kitchens? we lost our kitchens?' [external]

'Another thing what's good here is the culture centre too, it's very good. They do movies they do this - they do that. So not a lot of actual jails have got anything like that. If you can coordinate that into a jail system that that helps a lot' [prisoner]

Lifetime role as a 'criminal'

This section follows closely and overlaps with the previous narratives of 'citizenship' in how being seen as a particular type of person or of a demographic was to be a member or citizen of that group. This theme however speaks to the notion of the 'criminal' demographic and the apparent inevitability of a person identifying with it once inside (Turner 2012).

'And if you get dropped into a place like this, you have to put on a persona that you have to act like somebody that you're not to actually put these finger, there's two people and we have to kind of blend in, you know what I mean? So if you're hanging out with the architect, you're going to be an architect, you hang out with a criminal, you're going to be a criminal and pretty much kind of, you know, kind of what it is, you know what I mean?' [prisoner]

'There's no role models in jail except for bad people..... (talking about the type of person that could be a role model) Even university lecturers, do you know what I mean like? Someone might sit down and hear some university lecturer talk about something that's fucking interesting and he goes - well fuck - I'll get into that. We've got no influence, there's no role models in jail except for bad people' [prisoner]

'Put "it" in the jail. What does it create? Usually, it makes a criminal of a certain level become a better criminal at that level or even a worse criminal. And I don't mean better in the sense of being good because it's all designed to have a pyramid and your architecture helps it' [staff]

Institutionalisation – The lost citizen

Institutionalisation manifested in two areas of concern in the correctional centre interviews: the institutionalised prisoner, and the institutionalised staff member.

Both staff and prisoners were concerned about the prisoner that could be institutionalised and reliant on the prison environment as an acceptable place of

dwelling. Being cut off from society and the potential for the individual to become institutionalised was accepted as an inevitable outcome.

'The reality is that society is being composed in this place...they are all forming into one mould' [staff]

Beneath the surface the conversations revealed complex causes emanating from current and generational issues of lower socio-economic status, broken relationships, loss of culture, substance abuse, mental health, shame, loss of self-esteem, dignity, and homelessness. The following is included in the meta-narrative to acknowledge the concern shared within the penal community and recognise the 'lost citizen' who finds themselves transfixed in the liminal space between society and prison.

Prisoners spoke of how the prison routine becomes so familiar that the perceived chaos of the outside is more foreign than that of jail life. Many spoke of the effect of jail becoming their reality and how the effort of maintaining pro-social skills of the active citizen can be unbearable.

'Because the way I see it in a lot of boys in here - the way they've been brought up - what they know is instilled in them. It is scarier outside than what it is in here' [prisoner]

'I woke up in my own house, basically missing jail - thinking, oh shit, it's time for muster. And I felt strange in my own house. When I'd go down to the shops with my partner. Same feeling- like not a severe paranoia but a feeling of you don't belong' [prisoner]

'You know, and it's - for a lot of boys that have done jail two years, three years, four years, five years, six years.... they become institutionalised. A lot of them, I've heard stories, they miss jail so they purposely do crime to come back here again. They have no family on the outside. They have nowhere to live. They purposely do crime to come back here' [prisoner]

'I think a lot of people in here, they have a need to be wanted - to be accepted. If they had been picked on as young kids and were outcast. A lot of people - I find in most men they succumb to peer pressure. It's good to be cool. They might have been brought up with good families. I've seen many boys in here, younger lads brought up with good families, have a good education, but because of being the ugly boy or the not so popular boy - they succumb to peer pressure and look where it lands them? where are their mates now? they're not here. You know what I mean? It's very sad' [prisoner]

'So, they're out there doing whatever is they're doing, trying to keep it all together. The pressures of the drugs, the pressures of the bad, peer groups and whatever else. They're all out there. And suddenly I think, cause I can't speak to this myself, I haven't been released, but I think what happens at a subconscious level is they yearn for the security of their other home. So, they re-offend either subconsciously or consciously making a, having a motive to do that in order to, uh, to come back into the system. Which self-perpetuates. And it's no good for them. There's no good for the system and no good for the community' [prisoner]

'It (prison) inhibits people having decent relationships. Mature relationships' [staff]

'When you first come in, they're (the staff) are very intimidating. But after you been here for a while - everything just sort of fits in together. You know, when I get out, I know for a fact, you know, come to say six o'clock at night and I'm going to be standing at a doorway waiting to be locked in, you know, and it's going to take a little bit to adjust back to civilization kind of thing' [prisoner]

'They try their best, but mate - old habits die hard and you've got to provide for whether it be your family, yourself, whatever your addiction is. Mate - they just seem to go down that path again until such time as they're either dead or they're so heavily drug dependent and - excuse my French - just 'drug fucked'. They're just scrambled and I've seen some boys come in where they could have been anything athletes, especially a lot of the Indigenous lads so fit, so naturally gifted and - incarceration and after incarceration, like every time they go and then come back. Right. They're just different and not for the better' [Staff]

"'I'm going 'home". They don't refer to the pod or their cell, particularly a one-out cell as 'I'm going back to the unit out back', 'I'm going home' - and this is more prevalent with people who've been here for a while than it is and say someone's been here for six months or eight months. So, this shows me anyway that their thinking is - and I know - I've experienced it myself. Their thinking is that this, this is home and you should never ever think of this place is home' [staff]

The potential for institutionalisation was not limited to the prisoners. The staff spoke of the way they maintain a separate persona between their work and private lives. Some staff spoke of their relationship with the prisoners. Loss of empathy over

time – or being aware of their changing feelings towards the prisoners indicated a conscious maintenance of separation. Staff noted of the effects of prison work:

'I kind of just switch of when I come to work and the opposite when I leave. This is not normal to be in a place like this' [staff]

'You can be empathetic for so long and you sort of try and help people and then feel what they're going through and it's just- just gets to that point that you...yeah... You just switch off' [staff]

'You can't mix the two - as soon as you start taking home with our work to home with you and you started bringing home to work with you, you're done' [staff]

'This is not my life. This is just my work to complete - As soon as you step through that gate, it's a completely different aura in here, it's all a negative aura. It's not positive. There's nothing positive about this place' [staff]

Dignity/self esteem

The prisoners spoke of dignity in a number of contexts. Most spoke about accepting that they had committed some crime and were paying dues. The problem for most was how the penal environment impacted their sense of self in terms of dignity and self-esteem with regards to being part of society.

'We know we've done wrong. That's what puts us here. When in jail the worst thing is to lose your dignity' [prisoner]

'There's a saying; 'do the crime, do the time'. We needed judicial system; you know what I mean? Otherwise it would be total chaos out there. Okay. But - um, no. Just I think your attitude changes when you come to jail - not in regards of what you've done outside - or where you are going, you don't feel like you are anybody in here' [prisoner]

'... I had one guy ages ago -who go in the cell is six o'clock - he's had all day - and we got the cell at six o'clock and they look at me and have a conversation and while he's having a conversation he's dropped his pants down to his ankles and he just sat on the toilet. He's got no self-esteem He's having a dump and he doesn't care because he doesn't care. It means nothing to him. He's got to a point where he just doesn't care. He will walk around naked completely. So, I think the more you are held to an outside standard, the better it is for that person's self-esteem' [prisoner]

'I think - you know. That trying to treat someone with respect and dignity. Pays enormous dividends in terms of compliant behaviour'
[external]

'Some – Some of us just accept the darkness' [prisoner]

The perception of 'doing nothing' was expressed by a number of prisoners as the main impact on dignity.

'I'm starting to despise it. I'm sitting here rotting away' – 'It's just, um, we're left here to do nothing' – 'people are warehoused' [prisoner]

Family

The conversation topic of families transpired as the one area where there was common ground, or at least, potential for a shared experience across the whole interview participant cohort. Family 'visits' is the public node of any prison where all three groups – staff, prisoners, and the broader society can be in the same space to share in the same activity (notwithstanding the obvious power and functional forces that control the way a visit is conducted).

There were two camps in a prisoner's connection with family. Those that thought family was 'everything' made up the largest group. They valued the interaction even though it was overseen and controlled. The other camp was the one that did not want their loved ones to experience anything associated with prison life. The second camp intentionally distanced themselves from their family with a primary purpose of protecting them.

'the last fucking thing you want is (the kids) relating it to their father. Who is in fucking prison – in a negative environment they've felt?'
[prisoner]

'If we do the time – the family always does the time with us. They probably do more time and harder time than we do' [prisoner]

'they still want to come (even though he is a long way away) and visit, but yeah, I tell them not to. Once a year is good enough you know' [prisoner]

'I'm a bit torn with the whole visits thing because I don't think it's fair to normalize this as a weekend routine for a child. But at the same token, is it fair to them to not have access to their parent? And you know, it's, it can be traumatic. It can be very traumatic for a young child who doesn't get it. It's not big enough to understand what's happening' [staff]

External interview participants noted the issues around geographical separation and the potential impact on personal relationships.

'there is no use putting someone out at Broken Hill when their family is in Sydney' [external]

'They can do more in relocating people close to their families so they can re-connect' [external]

'I think most important to most inmates is having an ability to have relatively normal interaction with their family and friends when they come to visit' [external]

What is normal?

The conversations turned to what could be considered normal in the context of being a citizen. Further to the issues raised in the sections addressing 'Institutionalisation' and 'Role as a criminal' – the nature of the responses made it clear that there was no one standard idea of what is normal. Maintaining a resemblance of normalcy is seen by prisoners to be entirely subjective and changeable. What is understood as being normal varied day to day, over time, and between people. There was a degree of concurrence of what was normal when viewed as a collective idea, or social understanding of normality – similar to understanding the intentions or purpose of an NGO or government organisation:

'Well, TAFE - they sort of treat you like normal and that. That sort of thing to touch on outside and this TAFE has like in part what access we got for all the information coming in part from that TAFE is the real connection. Education -education those sort of things are good connection to the outside. Connects the two up together' [prisoner]

'I think I'm a bit of a pioneer in what I do in the state as far as corrections go in that I based it on the community model. I based it on a normalized approach in that people attend, they become library, borrowers. There are rules around the books that they can borrow a length of time that I can have just like in the community if they don't return the books, they get an overdue notice, builds that responsibility' [staff]

'you don't want a prison. You don't want people to have to go to prison to able to time out from the world. You want them to do as well and to still be able to live normal lives because I mean, if prison

shows anything is that 50 percent of the people that come out, go back in' [external]

'in prison, much of the normal day to day things do take place – going to work, education, the dentist and so on. The difference is the capacity to be able to do this through your own autonomy – rather than the managed by staff' [external]

'This is not normal to be in a place like this....' [staff]

'the trouble is that there is a real temptation for prison managers to divide people and also to have them running in tension with each other' [external]

'Well I've always thought that this place is like a village, it's got a hospital, it's got school, it's got an oval and it's got accommodation whether it is like flats or the housing community (inaudible) (KB - yeah) if you could design it more like a village, and village life, it would probably create...People would want to come back to jail over and over again - wouldn't they? .. it doesn't have to look like a village, as long as you feel like you're in one' [staff]

Purposefulness

Doing time without purpose was significant in the interviews. Prisoners often spoke of accepting their responsibility for their situation in prison and how their punishment was time away from society. The conversation then became more intense when prisoners reflected on how this time was expensed. The feeling of doing nothing, not being productive, not using the time to better one's self... or, as often described; 'rotting away' played strongly in the prisoners' sense of self and the personal qualities they were (or were not) developing during their sentence and likely to re-emerge in society with.

'the waste of life that goes on in a place like this – wasted opportunity' [prisoner]

'I'm on me 11th year. You start to think - Why the fuck am I in here for so long. I'm starting to hate the system. I'm starting to despise it. I'm sitting here just rotting away' [prisoner]

'It's just, um, we're left here to do nothing' – 'people are warehoused' [prisoner]

'they need to start doing more programs and um, education and things, but do it earlier. Like - I've been asking to do certain courses

for years now - but, 'ah - no - you're not ready yet - you've got too long to go'. They want you to do it before you get out and sit there and fester for 10 years - mate, you know? That's what's been happened with me. I've basically been put on the backburner. Oh - We'll get to you when we're ready you know. We know you want to help yourself now but you're not allowed to' [prisoner]

'you're putting the worse and the bad of the community into one place. So how can that be a good place really - how could it be? You try your best. But I think just education is a big, big thing in jail as well. If you can get people.... a lot of people can't read, can't write. A lot of them come from broken homes - don't have support, don't have nothing. It's a jungle out there. Survival of the fittest' [prisoner]

Staff valued purposefulness in their own context. Their sense of purposefulness related to being efficient and safe at their job and keeping the community safe. They aligned purposefulness with practice done well.

'I come to work at the same time every day. I do pills every day that I'm on, I do the fence check every day that I'm on. They're my jobs and that's what I do' [staff]

Part of purposefulness was associated with doing time and not being distracted. Across the prisoner and staff cohort, being able to focus on what is in front of you at the time, to progress time was important. Things that would normally be thought of as enhancing a prison environment were (surprisingly) considered as a distraction that resulted in 'head-miles'.

'depending on how long you have left. Okay. Yeah. A lot of, to a maximum security's out for about 20 years to go. And you've got a view of McDonalds do you know what I mean - or cars? I think that would put a downer to your time. Um, whereas something like here, if you can see the outside world, um, I don't know. I still don't think it's a, you still need to be focused that you're in prison. I mean there's otherwise, um, I dunno, you might become complacent and you may lose your direction of what you want to achieve whilst in prison' [prisoner]

'we try to forget about everything that's going on outside and focus what's going on in here. Here. Everything outside is, you know, is left behind the wall once you get to a place like this' [prisoner]

External participants aligned with the view that prison should be an opportunity for individuals to serve their time, but also to develop personally.

'.. the person who has been sentenced to a period of isolation and as such. That should not be excluded from the public view. Should be seen as a period of imprisonment and a growing... a chance for this person to grow' [external]

Social Connectivity

'Social connectivity' for prisoners and staff was a complex and personally contested notion. 'Family' was considered the main means for maintaining social connections (as per the 'family' section), but beyond family, most accepted a need to maintain some connection with 'society'. Broadly, the view was it was near impossible to maintain in any sense of wellbeing for those inside and out.

'The outside does not exist. It is just a fragment of imagination'
[prisoner]

'There is literally no connection with the outside – that's prisons across the board' [staff]

Across the prisoner cohort, with the exception of family related social connectivity, there was a consistent view that trying to maintain an immediate connection with community was less of a priority than being 'centred' and focussed on getting through your sentence.

'you still need to be focused that you're in prison' [prisoner]

'we try to forget about everything that's going on outside and focus what's going on in here' [prisoner]

'when you're in jail a lot of people choose to ignore or forget '
[prisoner]

'They're not severed - but a lot of them do sever because they get the, your family have this interpretation and perception of you, where they say – "fuck it - , that's all he's ever going to do - that's all he's ever going to be". He's been having it for 10 years - 15 years. So, they (*brushes his hands to indicate 'finished'*) like that and that's for their own sake of their own security. They're cut off to save themselves, investing emotionally - to be hurt, and then we turn around and do what we do' [staff]

On the presence of the walls and their role in the passing of time. Prisoners valued the walls in how they block the view to the outside world.

'It is, because you don't get complacent. Um, and you know where you are and aware of your surroundings, um, for your, for your safety as well' [prisoner]

Not all prisoners felt that being isolated was a good thing. Whilst all saw the value in being able to get through your sentence without distraction, others felt that this was not good for the personal development.

'I think the more interaction there is with the community, the more they are required to behave in a pro-social manner within a community environment rather than a prison environment' [prisoner]

In a broader sense, there was interest across the prisoner cohort for developing pro-social skills through interventions from outside institutions like NSW TAFE. The interaction with TAFE course material and teaching staff (by those that had access) was highly valued.

'they sort of treat you like normal and that' [Prisoner]

TAFE and similar interventions also offered the opportunity for prisoners to 'give back' to society through some of their learning activities.

'we're going to build a small caravan or something that will, um, as one of our tasks that will then be given to, you know, somebody somewhere who's sleeping rough for homeless or give, you know, there's projects or things that we could build that would then give back to, to the community - you know?' [Prisoner]

'Here is good because of the freedom and the issue to work and stuff like that. Yeah. If I wasn't working here (*the office*), I'd go down to the metal shop and they work on cars. Yeah. But um, Nowra - Nowra was good. They have a short traineeships and stuff. I'm trying to get back maybe to there because I've done part of a short course traineeships in the laundry there. If I can move there, finish that. It's not something I want to use for the outside - it just gives me another skill set. It's not something I'd pursue outside. But it keeps your mind focused and gives you some sense of normality regardless of what it is. It gives you some sort of connection with the outside' [Prisoner]

'Well, TAFE - they sort of treat you like normal and that. That sort of thing to touch on outside and this TAFE has like in part what access we got for all the information coming in part from that TAFE is the real connection. Education, education those sort of things are good connection to the outside. Connects the two up together' [prisoner]

Staff were similar to prisoners in their reaction to the benefits or concerns of social connectivity. They also held conservative views of the ability to make the prison more socially connected if seen in the context of security and safety.

'it's sort of hard to make a jail work security wise and keep it socially active cause that's not what it's really designed for' [staff]

In the context of seeing potential benefits to the overall well-being of the penal environment (notwithstanding more traditional concerns of safety and security):

(set up like) 'smaller based communities replicating to some degree, um, well based on human development processes' [staff]

I think that it's a wonderful thing to be able to have a community garden that people could share the produce and you have a roster around that' [staff]

'if you could design it more like a village, and village life' [staff]

'And I think if you're trying to genuinely develop, um, people to take responsibility, um, whether it be for their learning, whether it be for their behaviour, whether it be for their, um, their crimes. Yep. Then, you know, the emphasis needs to come back to the individual and then, you know, to develop those sorts of things (connection with society). I think you need some sort of, you know, freedom of movement, freedom of decision making within those confines. And I think, you know, the architecture needs to express that or allow or permit that' [Staff]

External participants that had direct dealings with prisoners viewed social connection as critical to prisoner well-being. On social isolation and disenfranchisement:

'first of all, it (prison) separates the person from all the support and people that they have. They lose any connection that holds them in the community that keeps them stable where they have their function and so on and so they can make a contribution' [external]

Additional to 'social connectivity' is the situation with Aboriginal prisoners and connection with country and community. It is not the intention of the research to address a specific cultural aspect, but where relevant, parts of the interviews are included as recognition of participants views and as potential for future research.

'language is a language and language is the big thing. And I speak to - every jail I go to I speak with a lot of brothers and they all say language was a big number one thing because some of them know how to play the digeridoo - the guitar - that's their way but they say - imagine sitting around the campfire talking to your kids in language' [prisoner]

'Now, the Aboriginal guys, the sense of spirituality of course is to be able to know, touch...and feel identified with the land. In maximum security here. The guys can't even see the bloody stars' [staff]

'it's particularly true of inmates who are disconnected from their families and this is true of Aboriginal inmates who were often have domestic violence issues and so they can't go back to their families after they get out. And there isn't anywhere else you know. And so, and so they end up going back being drunk you know and angry and you know the whole cycle starts again' [external]

Rehabilitation

Prisoners struggled to see the direct connection between the prison environment and rehabilitation. Across the interview cohort, the qualities of their immediate environment and any concept that a prison could be rehabilitative did not register.

'I think they, someone gets locked up, they chuck in a cage and then when they get released they chuck 'em straight back out' [prisoner]

' Yeah. You are being punished. The punishment shouldn't be you're out on a farm feeding cows or whatever - you are in a concrete jungle. But obviously in saying that is there rehabilitation in that? I don't think so' [prisoner]

'You want to learn better. I reckon - if someone wants to learn something in jail. Let them learn! What's the issue?', 'rather than shutting the fucking door - saying - no, that's it - no you are in jail, to give them a little sight of the light to get them to want to venture towards' [prisoner]

'Like surely, it's better to have people get qualified, or learned how to do new things that are going to help them once they, once they move on from here because that's the whole point. Isn't it supposed to be rehabilitation?' [prisoner]

'But I think it should be more about skill set, like TAFE courses and leaving jail with something that you can be proud of. A certificate, drug and alcohol, anger management. Those are all things that we need. Leaving here with some kind of trade is more important than anything. Those sort of activities can be brought further into the prison' [prisoner]

Through their day to day experience, staff, whilst recognising the programs for rehabilitation, were of a similar mindset to the prisoners with regard to the capacity for the environment to instil rehabilitative effects.

'prisons are not set up to 'rehabilitate' or get you ready to go back to society' [staff]

'I've worked in, (X) here now for five years. There's no rehabilitation here. There's no such thing. You're here to do time. You're not here to be rehabilitated. You're here to do your time – (then) to get rehabilitated' [staff]

Staff did question what a prison could be as a rehabilitative environment.

'there needs to be emphasis on the human development of the individual as well. And the architecture has got to reflect that to some degree as well' [staff]

'Like surely it's better to have people get qualified or learned how to do new things that are going to help them once they, once they move on from here because that's the whole point. Isn't it supposed to be rehabilitation?' 'staff'

'It's got to obviously be safe cause the whole concept of the prison is you remove people from society because they're a danger to society. Yeah. But on the flip side, is nearly all of them returned back to the community. So, the prison has to be the one be seen to be safe. And, 2 - It has to be actually doing something to rehabilitate. It is a double-edged sword. (KB - It is). You got your work cut out for you, my friend' [staff]

'punishment really is the fact that you will, you don't have the freedoms and you'll, you're confined in this area. But I mean, I think once you're in there, yeah - what we're, what we're doing is we're developing the person to re-enter society. Now if you're doing training in an area that doesn't mirror a training environment, or if you're doing programs in an area and you're not getting, you're not

allowed to have, build those relationships with, with the staff, for example, then I think the effectiveness of what you're doing is not going to, you know, it's not going to be measured in the results when they leave' [staff]

External participants recognised the balance between social expectations and rehabilitation. There was a broad acceptance that some form of prison was inevitable, but they were much more open to the possibilities of rehabilitation and other penal practices.

'People need to exact revenge –this interferes with the idea of rehabilitation' [external]

'It's intended by law to be (a place) to prepare the person to return to the community. It is intended to tell other people that they shouldn't have done the crime and it is intended to deter them as well. It is also a place to learn new skills' [external]

'It depends on the severity of the crime and in the case of Ivan Milat - I see you know he's never going to be released and there's really no point and we have to have prisons like that because the crimes are so terrible. But for anybody who's going to be released eventually into society I believe rehabilitation needs to be the key focus. And I believe that if you house people in a worse situation than they had outside then, um - Then all you're doing is creating more animosity and more resentment. You know and you're just building on what was already there' [external]

'And to me the key the key to rehabilitation and we go on about education and things like that. But the key is safety. If somebody feels safe, then they can participate. if they don't feel safe, and often the backgrounds that people come from, they don't feel safe outside - then everything else is just a waste of time. In my opinion people have to feel safe' [external]

Safety

Safety featured heavily in a prisoners' day to day demeanour. Most accepted that the spaces in the prison beyond the cell were likely to be less safe depending on the nature of the prisoner cohort. A sense of safety was associated with the chance of aggression in common zones amongst larger prisoner cohorts.

Prisoners felt most strongly about the cell arrangements in terms of how many were accommodated in a cell. One-ups were preferred, whilst more than this meant that the prisoner had to consistently be vigilant of his safety.

'you could just as easily find yourself sharing a cell with somebody who's six foot six and all they want to do is take what property you have off you, and if you're not able to stand up for yourself, you know, you'll go broke, you'll be miserable' [prisoner]

'just the ability for me to choose with whom I'm placed and that's a really important issue' [prisoner]

Some prisoners also valued the presence of the cameras – although this notion was not shared by all staff. The prisoners felt that it resulted in less chances of aggression if people thought they were being watched. The staff indicated that prisoners were not concerned if the cameras were on them. Prisoners also valued the cameras as a 'witness' if anything did occur which would result in a jail fine.

'active supervision is better for the inmates and staff rather than 'camera'. They don't care if they are on camera' [staff]

(the cameras have) 'no impact. In fact – it is a benefit as it records happenings and tells the truth of a situation' [prisoner]

In an overall sense, safety for staff was an absolute, non-negotiable aspect to their work.

'It's what it is. It's all safety. It's all about safety' [staff]

Staff did see themselves as having a double role. All staff took satisfaction in their civic role of keeping society safe and their workplace safe.

'I'm here to keep the community safe - do my job and makes sure everyone goes home safe with me' [staff]

'So, I'm here to make a difference - I do have a duty of care to the community to try and make that difference and I understand it. Um, but it's not good if I can't do my job' [staff]

'But you've got to remember the people in the community want to be safe and a lot of the people in the community are victims' [staff]

Staff were less confident in the design process for prisons. Staff felt that their knowledge wasn't fully sought or appreciated. The comments from the staff highlighted their perception of a disconnection between the knowledge of the design

team (including those that commission design) and the on-the-ground practice-based knowledge of the custodial staff.

'I find from my 10 years' experience people making decisions of what's happening inside a jail have never worked in a jail. The decisions they're making could cost an officer his life, you know. The majority of decisions that were made about how to run a jail are from people who've never worked in a jail - come call on muster for six months, come run a wing for six months, then tell me you've made the right decision' [staff]

'At the end of the day, they're someone's father. Someone's brother, someone's sister, someone's - somebody. And if you go to coroners court and they say, 'what took you so long to get to them - you could've saved their life', and you say we had to go through three extra doors that were built in there to get to him' [staff]

'the idea is for a jail is - I think is to be as open as possible but as secure as possible' [staff]

'If the buildings aren't set up right and you need to respond to something. And the way that building is built is delaying you from responding somewhere. That's someone's life' [staff]

'They can be designed so much more for the purpose and the occasion and it for both inmates and staff safety they could, but with just simple things like chutes, doors, areas of containment. But like we're with people can be moved to like, and not just to have open vast areas like this. Like it's too, it's very hard to manage and control' [staff]

External participants were also aware of the notion of safety. This often took the form of, 'if I was in prison....'. More broadly, safety was considered a function of rehabilitation and well-being.

'and to me the key the key to rehabilitation (and we go on about education and things like that) but the key is safety. If somebody feels safe then they can participate. If they don't feel safe and often the backgrounds that people come from they don't feel safe outside - then everything else is just a waste of time. In my opinion people have to feel safe' [external]

Summary Statements about Social Citizenship:

- The need for separation as punishment and to avoid distractions of the outside world.
- The effect of incarceration: The erosion of (any) pro-social skills to be replaced with deviant-social skills (crim university)
- The effect of incarceration leading to institutionalised behaviours: A growing reliance on the prison as a sustaining environment.
- The need for being purposeful: Dignity through purposefulness and not identifying as a prisoner.
- The need for the prison environment to allow the inmate to pay his dues in the means that fits his situation
- The concept of 'normal' did not correlate with a person's life outside and inside. What is understood as having the qualities of 'normal' did not correlate with the individual's concept of 'normal'. 'Normal' is a fluid subjective notion that holds meanings beyond the imagination of any one person.

3.2.3 Justice

Punishment

There was an array of approaches to punishment across the participant cohort from questioning its effectiveness at all through to more traditional takes on punitive practices. The approach in the interviews was to hold an open discussion in terms of what role and purpose it plays. As noted previously, the research takes a neutral position on punishment.

Punishment was discussed in terms of how it was perceived, what was 'fair' and just, and how it manifested through a sentence. The notion of how punishment could be experienced beyond the individual out into the community emerged as a significant theme for both prisoners and staff.

Prisoners primarily associated punishment with time out from society.

'I think being taken away from your family and freedom is prison enough' [prisoner]

'You are being punished. The punishment shouldn't be you're out on a farm feeding cows or whatever - you are in a concrete jungle. But obviously in saying that is there rehabilitation in that? I don't think so' [prisoner]

Staff saw the term of the sentence as the punishment. Some wondered if prison was effective as punishment as they saw people re-entering the system.

'They need to know that what they've... they need to know that there is punishment for what they've done. And some of them say, Oh, I'm going to jail. Is Punishment enough? But is it really? Because you don't seem to be learning. You come back to time and time again'
[staff]

'punishment really is the fact that you don't have the freedoms and you'll, you're confined in this area. But I mean, I think once you're in there, yeah - what we're, what we're doing is we're developing the person to re-enter society' [staff]

Externals reflected on community expectation of punishment.

'The sense is that you are clearly there for a reason – you're in there because you've wronged something or someone. Punitive (rightly or wrongly) is the expectation' [external]

'the period of imprisonment isn't it period for someone to be in a zoo'
[external]

Collateral punishment

Collateral punishment primarily extended to the effect of the time in prison on families. Prisoners and staff were equally wary of the effects of the prison environment on the families. Fear and shame is said to be experienced by a prisoner's family. Prisoners were particularly fearful of the prison environment being normalised for their children and how this could have potential to promote the criminal life down the generations.

'it's also punishing the family and it in a way, especially in "it's" got kids or something like the kids, just kids and you know to see their dad through glass screen. It's like down the track and play with their mind as well' [staff]

'I mean it depends on what the family says where they (the prisoner parent) are, and no one is going to lie to their kids - dad is in jail, this and that. You also don't want to glorify that to the child as though it is some fucking place that its some sort of fucking land of opportunity and great things and it is cool - it doesn't, it doesn't detract or deflect the kid away from not doing the right thing in the future' [prisoner]

Prisoners and staff felt that personal relationships suffered collateral punishment as they were often broken whilst inside.

'They're not severed - but a lot of them do sever because they get the, your family have this interpretation and perception of you, where they say – "fuck it - , that's all he's ever going to do - that's all he's ever going to be". He's been having it for 10 years - 15 years. So, they (brushes his hands to indicate 'finished') like that and that's for their own sake of their own security. They're cut off to save themselves, investing emotionally - to be hurt, and then we turn around and do what we do' [staff]

Externals saw collateral damage as a family issue as well but associated the issue with the geographical separation between the prisoner and the family.

'They can do more in relocating people close to their families so they can re-connect' [external]

Summary of Statements about Justice

- Punishment is time sentenced but not time dormant. Whilst it is accepted that the time served apart from society is the punishment, there is a general view that a sense of purpose needs to be felt otherwise time becomes useless. The sense of uselessness by not having purpose is further punishment that time itself.
- There is a strong preference for being able to focus on what is in front of you in prison. This helps time to pass and for everyone to play their role for the time they are there.
- The environmental conditions of the prison should not be more than the world outside.
- Punishment extends beyond the individual – it has a collateral impact on families. 'the kids will pay down the track'. The impact of imprisonment is both historic in terms of the life experiences that lead to the prison term for the prisoner. It is also generational participants sensed that it is a trauma that is felt by more than the just the individual serving the sentence. It has a social impact that is broader than the individual life event of a sentence that is beyond the walls of the prison and likely to have residual societal implications into the future.

3.2.4 Architecture

Introduction

Alenka Fikfak's et al, is a framework defining the main qualitative elements of prison architecture. This Fikfak et al. (2015) 'The Contemporary Model of Prison

Architecture: Spatial Response to The Re-Socialization programme' framework is utilised to organise the significant statements. The framework has five key qualitative elements:

- Location of the prison
- Spatial concept and design of the prison
- Appearance of the prison
- Accommodation, cells and blocks
- Content and functionality of the prison

Location

Location is discussed in terms of the prison integration with its setting in relationship with the local environment. The prisoner responses expressed a tension between the need for a prison to express a look of deterrence or, an aesthetic the suggested rehabilitation was in play. The purpose of the deterrence aesthetic was symbolic to ward off future criminals and also to let remind society the prison was a facility with a civic purpose of justice.

'Big fences and all wire on top. I think that's appropriate' [prisoner]

'I don't want to be in this bad place (*civic message to future criminals*) - it looks like a scary place. It should be something to look at - you know what - it makes you think' [prisoner]

'It should look like a prison' [prisoner]

'We can't have it looking like a hotel. You need it to be a deterrent' [prisoner]

'It should have a fence around it. The bottom line is you, you need to be presenting a message to, to people' [prisoner]

Whilst there was a strong sense that the aesthetic of a prison was deterrence, alternative conceptual views sought to articulate the possibilities of a more socially engaging aesthetic that articulated progress – or an aesthetic that suggested that 'bad' could turn to 'good'.

'Prisons should show society that we are doing our best to um, uh, like re-educate criminal - to give them a chance' [prisoner]

'I think from a community point of view, a prison should probably look more like a high school or university campus from the outside. And, to a certain extent, on the inside, it should run like that' [prisoner]

'Not a place of fear but a place where, 'people understand that you're in there - but to take the opportunity to get something out of what you're in there for... A lot of jails you look at are just a dark corner of the community' [prisoner]

Staff spoke about the prison aesthetic in very similar deterrent terms as the prisoners but were also aware of the potential negative energy prison architecture plays in a community:

'it should be a deterrent' [staff]

'If you don't tow the line then this is where you're going to end up' [staff]

'no one wants a prison in the middle of the city because it's just, it's just negative' [staff]

'it doesn't need to be sugar coated to what's really happening in there' [staff]

'Cause there's nothing friendly about the space. You got to remind the public about that' [staff]

'As long as it doesn't look like you're driving past death every time you drive past the place' [Staff]

'but also, from another point of view, like if you drive past the jail and you see high walls and razor wires, it looks like a pretty scary place. And if that can scare like a child or a teenager into thinking, oh, that's not some place I want to end up' [staff]

'It appears that the, the solution at the moment is to warehouse even bigger and talk about mega jails. So, um, and, and put them in country areas so they're out of sight, out of mind' [staff]

Externals had a more varied approach to the civic aesthetic. There was more of a feeling for the potential integration of the prison into a community.

'it can be really useful for people who are not in custody to actually physically be able to see into custody' [external]

'we should break them up into smaller manageable pods and integrate them into society' [external]

'no better than what the community expects on the outside' [external]

Spatial Concept and Design

Prisoners did not feel that the size of the prison was relevant to them.

'never sat and thought about it' [prisoner]

Staff were more concerned with the spatial efficiencies of the area they needed to manage and less concerned with the size of a prison.

Prisoners valued outdoor amenity. Access to gym equipment (that worked).

'exercise is one of the things that keeps us focussed and healthy – you know – motivated' [prisoner]

Outdoor amenity was seen as an antidote to wasting time. Inmates valued good outdoor amenity. Particularly access to equipment that contributed to maintaining health.

Application of colour and artwork in the built environment was met with a mixed response. Some recognised it as being positive, whereas it did not register with others.

'It kind of brings life - it kind of brings excitement. A lot of other stuff that you can pick from colours that kind make you feel good inside for some reason. You know what I'm saying? It's more of a happier place kind of thing, you know? Same as flowers, same as certain other objects, you know what I mean? So, it does have a very big, big, big role in, in the jail systems' [prisoner]

'I don't know (about colour and design) - like I said - a jail is jail. It's just fucking jail' [prisoner]

Staff did not feel that the prison environment could replicate the outside world meaningfully.

'it's not what it is designed for' [staff]

Appearance of the Prison as a Whole

Prisoners predominately noted the appearance of a prison should speak to its role. As with the external appearance of 'deterrence', the internal appearance should afford symbols of being purposeful.

'we can't have it looking like a hotel or you know, or hotel facilities. See what I mean?' [prisoner]

'you need it to be a deterrent' [prisoner]

Broadly, staff attitude to their work environment was one of detachment. For them, the primary concern was not appearance, but safety and efficiency. Many staff participants expressed low interest in what their work environments looked like. It was all about function.

'it should look like a jail - definitely look like a jail. So, when I come in there's fences up - there's barbed wire' [staff]

'keep the maximum scary looking, keep them, very kind of sterile, but yet it's kind of that intimidation side of look' [staff]

'Hopefully it's a deterrent. Like, oh, this place is horrible. I don't ever want to come back here' [staff]

'I don't care if it is just four walls and a gate - as long as it's functional it does what we need to do and keep inmates safe and serve a purpose. It can be pink or whatever ...' [staff]

Accommodation, Cells and Blocks

As noted previously in 'Safety', inmates felt strongly about the number of people to a cell. Cells with more than one person was a constant exercise in negotiation, controlling fear, and being alert to the potential of harm.

The living conditions were often a focus. Vermin (mostly insects but also rats) were often used to highlight the quality of the living conditions across all prisons.

'not just the living conditions man, but you've got a lot of other stuff you're worrying about, you know, that's why there's a lot of suicidal rates inside the system because people, they got their families worrying about - they got their wives, they got their mortgages, they got, you know, all this kind of stuff - and then on top of that, they're sitting in a cell with cockroaches and all this kind of stuff - you know?' [prisoner]

'Here there's a cockroach problem but it's cleaner and a lot better facility' [prisoner]

Living conditions in the more modern minimum-security prison were set up like a group house. This was seen as a positive arrangement in a social sense that the prisoners engaged with each in a relatively semi-formal residential setting. Being able to socialise with other inmates and taking responsibility for daily tasks was also positive.

'coming to a facility like this where it's new and the, and the wings, are new, uh, where we live - our living quarters. Uh, it's more, it's more humane....Well there's more modern is modern kitchen. Okay. There are proper lounges. There's a proper huge smart TV on the wall and you're not locked into your cell. You're locked into the wing' [prisoner]

Prisoners had heard of in-cell technology. Some had experienced it at other prisons. All inmates felt that in-cell technology would be a good thing for the self-esteem of the individual. Being able to access basic information when they wanted was seen as a valuable contribution to their agency over their day. It removes the reliance on the custodial staff for information. In-cell technology and the affordance of agency was also considered valuable contribution to the agency and well-being of prisoners by external participants.

'There are external services which are available in the general community and as soon as you have access to a computer in a cell then you have people then can access those services' [external]

Prisoners preferred small wing capacity.

'when you've got 40 or 50 guys - it's hard to - and four or five different races too sometimes. That doesn't help... you know you will have your junkies here, you have this one there..' [prisoner]

'It works better if there is less people. Um, yeah. Less people in a pod. The less shit goes on. Uh, you're more likely them boys will get to bond together, you know, and then they'll start - you know what I mean' [prisoner]

Other aspects of accommodation that were important to prisoners: In-cell technology – cleanliness and being able to clean your own space – wing/pod surveillance (good) – capacity to control temperature – both air and water.

Staff acknowledged the problems of more than one inmate per cell. They also acknowledged the poor living conditions in some of the prisons – particularly the older ones. They spoke about how the system could do better in the cell accommodation conditions.

‘...and that’s the thing – you’ve got humans sitting there day in and day out – and it’s a small space and you’re sitting there with another person’. Further, ‘you’ve got your toilet right there next to you – so you’re eating and doing everything and your toilet is right there’
[prisoner]

Content and Functionality

Important to the research in this category are the aspects of analogy with the outside world, diversity of programs, characteristics of common spaces, and linking with external institutions.

Analogy with the outside world

‘If they cut you off completely sort of thing that’s not going to help - either one - it’s not going to help us or help society release the inmates back into it’ [prisoner]

‘You’re never alone’ [prisoner]

‘if you can see the outside world, um, I don’t know. I still don’t think it’s a, you still need to be focused that you’re in prison. I mean there’s otherwise, um, I dunno, you might become complacent and you may lose your direction of what you want to achieve whilst in prison’
[prisoner]

‘I think the more you are held to an outside standard, the better it is for that person’ self-esteem’ [prisoner]

‘Not important to be connected to the outside world’ [staff]

‘having multi-factory type prison environments where the inmate is nothing more than a number is going to exactly. And um, uh, confirm that view. But having said that, when I look in the world and the human beings are now called resources to profit rather than staff, well one is reflecting the other obviously. (KB - Yeah). So smaller based communities replicating to some degree, um, well based on human development processes’ [staff]

Diversity of programs

This code should be read in a similar context to other statements around purposefulness.

Well we moved into this. It's a nice new looking facility. You know, it's like being stuck in a Meriton sort of apartment, you know, the living, but they haven't thought about what the inmates are going to spend their time doing. [prisoner]

leaving here with some kind of trade is more important than anything. [prisoner]

I've been here 13 months and you know I'm lucky if I came twice to education and that was me actually annoying the officer. There's just - some jails are easy - some jails are hard. some just you know. [prisoner]

Common spaces

The functionality and use of common spaces rather than the material qualities was the focus of the prisoners. Being able to use common spaces to head off boredom was seen as important.

'It's a positive recreational activity, you know, it's um, keeps your mind, you know, I'm just, it's things like that. That's really what you need because you've got a lot of hours to kill when you, you know, look in between doing stuff' [prisoner]

'the boys get plastic bags and pour water in the bags. But you're not allowed to do that because, you know it's as dangerous. Yeah but you know when boys want something to keep in mind it would be like. Exercising one of the things that keeps us focussed and keep us healthy You know motivated' [prisoner]

The greening of common spaces was less of a focus to both staff and prisoners in the context of this research (it is the focus of other research being done around the time of this project (Moran et al. 2020)). Biophilic design did not register highly in this research as it wasn't a topic of focus. There was some correlation between seeing green space and a sense of personal wellbeing.

'the, only place within this centre is when we go down to the lower yards and there's grass down there. It sounds a bit silly, but it's the only place in the centre where there's grass. So that kind of reminds

you of the outside. Otherwise for us is concrete. Concrete metal.
Yeah. Razor wire bricks that, yeah' [prisoner]

A positive approach to green space was expressed if it assisted in a person's feeling of being productive or healthy. A distinct departure from this is the input from some of the Aboriginal prisoners. They had a different approach in that having the ability to walk on natural ground was seen as a form of connection with 'land'.

'if you can see a bit of grass is nice. We're not allowed to take our shoes off in this yard, but the one up at MRR had like a bit of a like a dusty soil and I used to take my shoes off and walked around and just, that's the closest thing to sand' [prisoner]

Linking with external institutions that provided transitional knowledge for returning to community was thought of as beneficial to the prisoners.

'People from the community. So, I guess, um, you've got, you know, mental health, health services, health services, aboriginal specific services and housing, Centrelink. Um, sort of people who've developed like small business, like they might do sort of presentations or work fairs. So basically, I guess generic services that are available, men's groups, community groups, those sorts of things' [staff]

Summary of Statements about Architecture

- Near the community. Within the community. An urban buffer is required.
- Prison aesthetic should not pretend to be anything that what it is.
- Public integration is not desired – it is thought of as a distraction to the life of the prison (purpose and safety)
- The size of the prison is not the issue – it is the size of the wings and yards that matter.
- Functionality needs to be legible in the spatial organisation.
- 'Views/aspect' should be internally focussed to maintain personal and professional focus
- The prison should not have the motifs of the outside world but could function like the outside world. 'it might not look like a village – but it could function like one'
- The wall is valued as a psychological/social divide

- There are existing environments that encourage social and interpersonal life skills. This applied to one modern prison.

3.3 COMPOSITE DESCRIPTIONS – THE ‘ESSENCE’

3.3.1 Introduction

Composite descriptions are a means to group the significant statements from the previous section into broader units of meaning that describe the essence of the phenomena (Creswell & Poth 2016, pp. 201-2). They remain thematically organised under the primary codes of ‘social citizenship’, ‘justice’, and ‘architecture’ for clarity. It should be noted that numbered coding of the composite descriptions becomes visible from this point so the reader can visually track a description onwards to scripts (section 3.4), and design-oriented scenarios (Chapter 4).

The following diagram identifies the primary codes that the composite descriptions are organised. The tables following the diagram are a summary of the composite description titles.

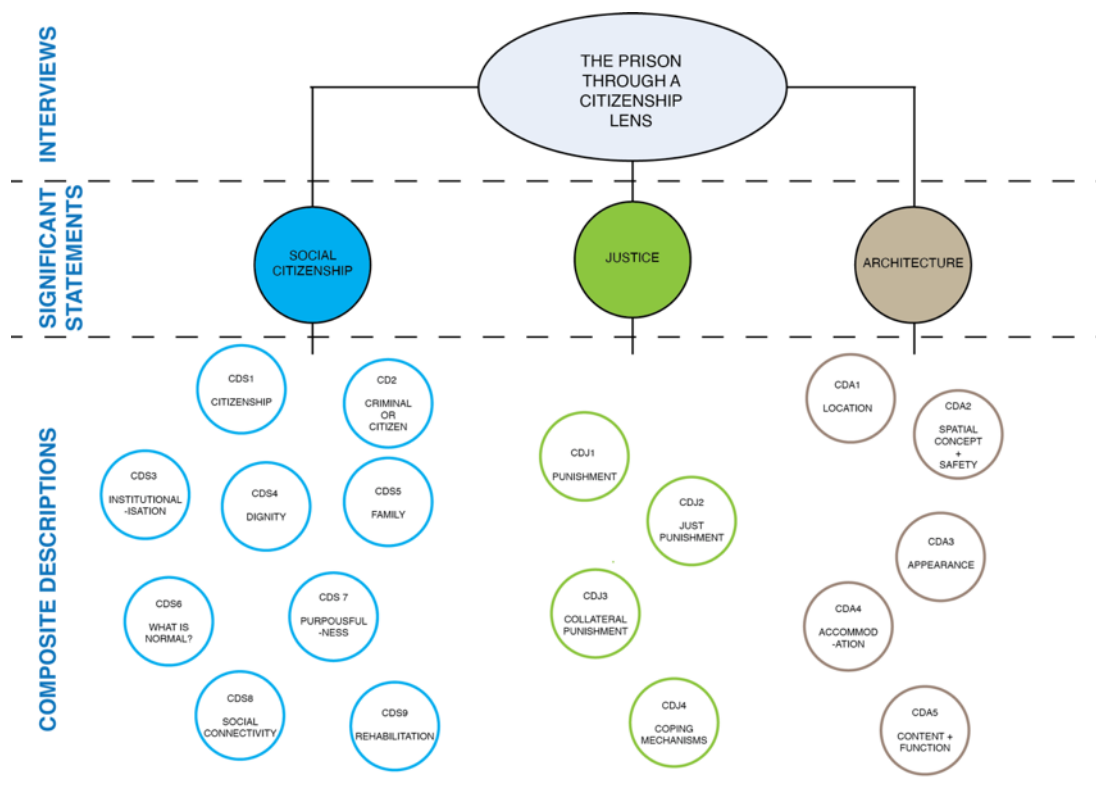


Figure 3-2. Composite Descriptions

Table 3-4. Social Citizenship – Composite Description Titles

Social Citizenship	
CDS1	Citizenship
CDS2	Criminal or Citizen
CDS3	Institutionalisation
CDS4	Dignity
CDS5	Family
CDS6	What is normal?
CDS7	Purposefulness
CDS8	Social connectivity
CDS9	Rehabilitation

Table 3-5. Justice – Composite Description Titles

Justice	
CDJ1	Punishment
CDJ2	Just Punishment
CDJ3	Collateral Punishment
CDJ4	Coping mechanisms

Table 3-6. Architecture – Composite Description Titles

Architecture	
CDA1	Location
CDA2	Spatial concept and safety
CDA3	Appearance
CDA4	Accommodation
CDA5	Content and function

3.3.2 Social Citizenship

CDS1. Citizenship

For many on the outside, being a citizen essentially means that they are part of society and there are some notions of responsibility in getting on with others, doing the right thing, paying for things when they are needed to be paid for – contributing to the ‘general will’ for the ‘common good’ (Rousseau 1977, p. 61). Whilst citizenship on the outside is a relatively simple reference to being a societal member, it does not have a clear technical description and does not appear in the Australian Constitution (Buckmaster & Thomas 2009; Dreyfus QC MP 2008; Rubenstein & Lenagh-Maguire 2014). On a day to day basis, the question of citizenship on the outside is somewhat taken for granted and only rarely brought to attention to the public.

On the inside the nature of citizenship is brought into focus. In its broadest sense, all participants recognised a sentence served (or waiting to be sentenced) for a crime was part of justice and the prisoner as a citizen of a society that did the crime was incarcerated from society as punishment. Once inside, the nature of being a citizen was one of separation from society. The essence of citizenship once inside then takes on a kind of value narrative that centres around four aspects:

- Once being inside and the period of the sentence known, it is important to the prisoner that they can move through time and not feel that time is dormant
- Being able to focus – both prisoner and staff
- Separation, but connection (see family)
- There is a citizenship of the prison have defined roles that aren’t crossed

Whilst there is an ambiguity about citizenship in broader society, the essence of citizenship in prison is one of civil separation, defined roles, 'doing time' and whether a person still identifies with having purpose on the outside or takes on a role of a citizen of the prison. As found in the statements, there are many environmental variables (economic, health, homelessness, age) that impact the capacity in how a person maintains a sense of self (and future self) on the inside.

CDS2. Being a criminal

Inmates felt strongly about the association with other criminals in the prison environment. All felt that criminal association perpetuated a criminal class. The prison was often referred to in terms like; 'crim university'.

Inmates indicated that the association with other criminals and being exposed to criminal behaviour content in day to day conversations set an inevitable closer association – or 'differential association' from their previous social associations towards the criminal class. Turner notes of this effect: 'What is also apparent is that, once incarcerated, prisoners become intrinsically incorporated into and practice citizenship to the community of the prison, which is in many cases contra the manifesto of the 'outside' ideal.' (Turner 2012, p. 332).

Staff spoke of the inevitability of the emerging criminal class based on their observations of how inmates returned to the prison system.

External participants experience of this is through recognition of the recidivism statistics. Some observed receding crime figures and increasing incarceration rates as a possible link to this category.

CDS3. Institutionalisation

Inmates noted that the prison system is creating a class of people that find the prison system more acceptable than life on the outside. The familiarity of the prison routine and the requirement to uphold complex social behaviours and responsibilities of an active citizen on the outside is overbearing. Inmates spoke of those that suffer from this form of institutionalisation and how it causes them to do crime so that they return to prison. Most spoke about this as either a means of dealing with homelessness, or the individual's decreasing ability to maintain acceptable social skills for being on the outside.

Staff spoke about their need to turn on their functional persona as they entered the prison and switch it off as they left. This behaviour was also spoken of in terms of coping with the work tasks at hand, the nature of their charges, and a means of keeping safe. They all spoke of maintaining separation of their lives.

External participants saw 'institutionalisation' as an effect on the capacity for a person to return to the community because of their experiences of isolation from the community.

CDS4. Dignity

Inmates spoke of dignity in terms of paying their dues to society. They understood that their time away from society is the penalty for their actions, but they pointed to how their sense of self and self-worth was connected to the manner in which their sentence was expensed. Idleness, or 'rotting away' – 'not being purposeful' in expending their time was often linked to dignity.

Staff connected dignity to the manner in which they conducted their tasks and how they treated the inmate.

External participants viewed dignity as a 'rights' issue for inmates.

CDS5. Family

Most inmates viewed the connection with family as the primary connection with society.

Inmates had a mixed response to families visiting or experiencing the prison environment. All saw value in 'visits' but some were very conscious of younger family members associating the prison environment as being normal and the potential for prison life as being an acceptable thing with the danger in this to likely lead to generational prison terms.

Staff also expressed concerns about the effect of visits on families. They accepted the visits as a fundamental part of the inmate's connection with their family. They are concerned on the effect on the younger family members.

External participants, staff, and inmates all mentioned the need for inmates to be located close to their families, so it is not a burden for the family to visit.

CDS6. What is normal?

Note to this code: What is normal was often spoke of in the context of 'normalisation', 'rehabilitation' and 'reintegration'. It is a code that emerged broadly across the conversations. It captures participants conversations about their lives and those around them. Inmates would often speak about their lives and the extent the system has a capacity of control over them.

The idleness of the prison environment causes inmates to seek means of stimulation. This activity is dependent on the individual. Inmates spoke of seeking stimulation through access to education or art, others spoke of their observations of others employing behaviours of "shopping" and drug taking.

Staff are aware of the inmate's initiatives for stimulation and appear to maintain a detached-observer role (opting to fulfil prescribed tasks)

The view from inmates and staff is that the association with criminals will almost inevitably draw you closer to that class and make you one of them leading to repeat prison entries.

Inmates noted that it is an established (and increasing) cohort that see the prison as 'normal life' and seek to return to it after release.

Externals indicated that it was likely that the inmate would have been at a disadvantage before entering prison being from a poor socio-economic background

CDS7. Purposefulness

Purposefulness for inmates is associated with dignity. Inmates often spoke of doing time purposefully. Whilst being purposeful was aligned with industry or education, it was more significant that purposefulness was spoken about in as the antidote to idleness.

Staff spoke of purposefulness in terms of being able to do their job safely and efficiently.

CDS8. Social connectivity

Social connectivity appeared to be an individual thing for inmates. They fall in two broad categories; those that maintain social connectivity (mostly through their families) and those that deliberately limit social connectivity.

Family connection is valued and is the main portal to community.

Those that sever ties with family are doing this to limit the burden on their relatives and possible criminal generational influence on their children.

Inmates found the interaction with TAFE as a very positive means for maintaining social connections. Two aspects contributed to this; being productive through learning and being viewed as a 'learner' and not a 'criminal'.

Inmates could not see how social connection could be facilitated other than the phones, visits, or TAFE. These are the main portals to the outside for staying connected.

Staff did not see a need for social connectivity between the broader social setting and the prison environment. Separation of these environments assisted with the understanding of always being in the moment. Some staff felt that a 'dumbing down' of the prison environment would lead to a relaxation in concentration and inevitably less safe.

External participants indicated social connectivity was a function of locating inmates close to their original communities.

CDS9. Rehabilitation

Inmates often spoke of the struggle to reconcile the qualities and meaning of their immediate environment with the expectation that they are being rehabilitated.

Inmates also struggled to reconcile the concept of rehabilitation as they felt that the mechanisms applied by the system were arbitrarily applied. They indicated it depended on the prison you were in ('they are all different'), the nature of the individual, your relationship with staff, the availability of programs, and where you were in your sentence (or if you were sentenced).

Inmates also reflected on rehabilitation when they recognised that most of them were from lower socio-economic backgrounds and the aspiration for rehabilitation was at odds with their life in general.

TAFE, industry, and learning were considered the most constructive forms of rehabilitation. Inmates spoke of these as offering them the opportunity to get ahead when they get out.

Staff recognised the need for inmates to take a rehabilitative journey. Often they saw this as a function of time and not necessary aligned with industry or learning which fall under 'programs'

External participants aligned rehabilitation with leaving the prison system as a functioning member of society.

Key social descriptions to take forward:

- The need for separation as punishment and to avoid distractions of the outside world.
- The effect of incarceration: The erosion of (any) pro-social skills to be replaced with deviant-social skills (crim university)
- The effect of incarceration leading to institutionalised behaviours: A growing reliance on the prison as a sustaining environment.
- The need for being purposeful: Dignity through purposefulness and not identifying as a prisoner.
- The need for the prison environment to allow the inmate to pay his dues in the means that fits his situation
- The concept of 'normal' did not correlate with a person's life outside and inside. What is understood as having the qualities of 'normal' did not correlate with the individual's concept of 'normal'. 'Normal' is a fluid

subjective notion that holds meanings beyond the imagination of any one person.

3.3.3 Justice

CDJ1. Punishment

All participants recognised 'punishment' as time away from society.

Attitudes towards punishment varied across the interview participant cohort:

- Inmates indicated that punishment was continuous over their terms. For them it is experience in many forms ranging from restriction of access to activities and equipment, two-person cell living, the poor quality of living conditions in some of the cells or wasting their life by doing nothing with their time.
- Staff spoke of having to use incremental forms of punishment during an inmate's term depending on the behaviour of the inmate. Mostly this meant a suspension of something – family visits, access to equipment, access to phones
- External participants did not have sufficient sight of the internal operations of the penal environment to offer more than a general view of 'time-out' being punishment.

CDJ2. Just Punishment

All inmates indicated an acceptance that they had to do their time for the wrongs they inflicted on society.

Inmates indicated that the environmental conditions of their incarceration should reflect their situation. They did not think that the prison could or should be something that was better than the socio-environmental conditions on the outside. They wanted to know that they were in prison so they could focus on their time and get through their term.

Staff indicated that the conditions of inside should not be better than those available to the general public. Staff often spoke about the uniqueness of their position of being able to see what the public cant as they come and go.

External participants also spoke of conditions on the inside not being better than those available to the general public.

CDJ3. Collateral Punishment

Inmates offered personal reflections on collateral punishment. Collateral punishment was a broad conversation. The following gives an overview of inmate concerns of how their punishment impacts on others as perceived punishment:

- Families in visits feeling the effect of punishment
- Children not being able to interact with their fathers in a natural way in visits
- Children seeing their fathers in 'greens'
- The distance from an inmate and his community and associated time/financial burden on families for visits
- The deterioration in personal relationships
- The effect of the prison term – 'angry men and women' returning to community and the impact on the community

Staff viewed collateral damage in their custodial role overseeing visits. They observed the impact of families and expressed empathy.

External participants aligned collateral punishment with geographical separation of inmate and family.

CDJ4. Coping Mechanisms

All inmates indicated that they needed to remain focussed on doing their time. They did not want to be distracted by their environment. For some, this included not having views to the outside world or being reminded of what is out there.

All staff spoke of having to maintain two personas; one for work, and one for their personal life. They maintain a strict separation. They are also conscious that none of their personal life is shared with inmates. Issues around personal safety were the forefront of this, but for some staff, it was a matter of fairness towards the inmate. They did not want to give any indication of how much better their life is over the inmate's.

External participants did not mention anything about coping mechanisms.

Key punishment descriptions to take forward:

- Punishment is not to be felt as an incremental application during incarceration.
- Punishment is time away from society. Focus on being able to get through (the period of incarceration – or workday).

- The environmental conditions of the prison should not be more than the world outside.
- Punishment extends beyond the individual – it has a ripple effect.

3.3.4 Architecture

The following is a composite description of the data under the main ‘architecture’ categories and subcategories:

CDA1. Location

There are three aspects of location that were referred to in the interviews; Geographical association with family, the actual location of a prison with respect to its role/appearance in the urban/landscape, and the extent of integration with the integration with the surrounding society.

Inmates and external participants all indicated that prisons should be near community. Inmates often spoke of separation from community and how they could be closer, or, prisons could be closer to communities to where the inmate is from. This was most significant for the inmates in regional prisons which appear to be difficult to get to. It was particularly significant for the indigenous inmates in both regional and city located prisons where there was a sense of cultural separation – not being on country and loss of language. Comments in this category are similar to other comments in 29 and 30.

Inmates and staff both felt that the prison should resemble its role in the urban landscape. There were varying responses to this – some thought a ‘university’ or ‘school’ aesthetic’ could have been more appropriate, but all felt that it should not make it out to be anything less than its intended role. It could look ‘institutional’ in a number of forms, but it had to have a message of deterrence.

Inmates and staff could not imagine how a prison could, in itself, integrate with the surrounding urban/landscape. Both cohorts felt that integration was not desirable. Inmates spoke of needing the separation from community to do their time without distraction. Staff spoke in integration as an erosion of the prison’s role and message to those incarcerated. They felt that integration would cause distraction and lead to lapses in safety.

External participants thought that a level of integration would benefit the inmate’s rehabilitation. A social housing analogy of a prison typology was suggested as a way of integration.

CDA2. Spatial Concept and Design

Both inmates and staff were not concerned about the size and capacity of the prison as a whole. They were both concerned about the proportional breakup of the

prison as it relates to their personal interactions with other inmates on a wing or the number of people to control in a yard. The size of a wing was commonly suggested at no more than 40 inmates by both the inmates as a number where you could maintain your place within the wing and by staff as a manageable cohort. (note – this applies to maximum and medium sectors and not minimum)

Layout was more significant to staff. They spoke of layout in terms of function - safety and efficiency. Being able to close off sectors/yards and being able to get to incidences quickly was a primary concern. Broadly, the overall layout of the prison did not impact staff or inmates whilst they were assigned to a particular prison/sector/wing. Inmates did find that all jails were different and expressed psychological discomfort in the variations in architecture and daily procedures.

The form of the prison was a part of the conversation that was least understood by all participants. For both inmates and staff, prisons were prisons, and that is what they had to be. The approach to this category was similar to comments around needing to know that you are in prison for the inmate and the architecture exhibiting meaning of the intended function of the prison.

Daylight quality did not feature as a major concern to inmates and staff. Night time was more of a concern for some inmates at a number of locations. They didn't have any window protection and had to spend their evenings in 'natural light' as any powered light would attract insects into their cells.

Materials were spoken of in terms of resilience and quality. Inmates and staff all spoke of the issues of how materials and furniture often broke or became degraded. Staff spoke of this in the same context but were also more cognisant of materials being better inside than that available to those outside. One staff member offered a yard-stick analogy of, 'Maybe the cells should be like a cheap hotel room'.

Staff did not have a focus on the materials in their own workplace. They often noted the materials and colours could be anything, so long as they could so their work efficiently and safely.

The conversations around colour was that it is a, 'nice to have' and possibly positive, but was seen as a lesser consideration to higher human needs of agency, safety, quietness, and the number of people in a cell.

The correlation between the surrounding and prison space was spoken of in terms of how the prison could sit within the immediate urban fabric. Staff saw the prison being set back behind a green buffer so the wall wasn't immediately apparent but still sent the message of deterrence. Inmates had no view on how the prison was situated within the urban fabric but were more concerned with the moment of leaving prison and having the opportunity to move away from the wall without being labelled as a person leaving prison.

Outdoor vegetation had a mixed response. In general, outdoor vegetation was seen as a positive environment by both inmates and staff. Staff noted that the outdoor spaces were good for the inmates health but they were often spoken about as one of the first forms of incremental punishment. Access to outdoor spaces was limited depending on the behaviour of the inmate cohort as a punishment.

Inmates spoke of the value of access to outdoor spaces for their health. Inmates noted that they needed to focus on their time in jail and many of them spoke of not wanting to see outdoor spaces beyond the wall (note: this applies to inmates in remand and medium security – other inmates in minimum security spoke in warm terms of being able to hear the wildlife in an adjoining wetland at night)

Size of the outdoor areas featured prominently for staff. The size of the outdoor space was seen as a function of security/safety/efficiency. Staff often spoke of the capacity of outdoor spaces as, 'how many people will we have to control if there was an incident?'. Inmates preferred smaller outdoor areas (apart from 'the oval' which is a special type of space) as it meant not having to deal with too many individuals and their varied personalities/roles in the yard.

Staff saw the materialisation of the outdoor spaces as needing to be functional. Fences, chutes, and gates were all considered a fundamental materialisation of the outdoors.

Inmates spoke about the materialisation of the outdoor spaces as needing to support their purpose of getting through time. Amenity for exercise was highly valued. Inmates felt that the outdoor spaces needed to feel like a prison – or have the sense that they are purposeful.

Characterisation of the urban furniture was not primary consideration for both inmates and staff. It did so, when speaking about the furniture and amenity afforded to the visits area. The furniture and amenity for children was a concern with regards to the messages it gave off in both material and function. Whilst there was acknowledgment that there will always be restrictions and conditions on the conduct of the inmates and visitors, inmates struggled with the inflexible approach to seating/play equipment both as furniture and the way in which visitors had to remain seated (this was not at all prisons).

Inmates and staff clearly differentiated between the inside and outside of prison. Staff in particular had the view that the prison on the inside should resemble, function, and give off meaning to them and the inmates that this is a prison. This assisted with their focus on carrying out their tasks.

Inmates were keen to maintain their focus whilst incarcerated and felt that the prison should not have the distractions of the outside world. As mentioned in the previous sections – the inmates highly valued the interaction with industries, education, and TAFE as a way of seeing themselves as 'other' than an inmate and a sense of personal progression.

The prison inside should not have the motifs of the outside world but could function like the outside world - 'it might not look like a village – but it could function like one' staff comment.

Conversation about 'bars' was limited. Inmates spoke of windows that could not close, but not in the context of the imagery of 'bars'. Staff spoke of bars more in terms of barriers. These barriers manifested as gates or walls. Neither of the cohorts saw bars as anything out of the ordinary and didn't hold strong views on them.

The 'wall' is significant to all cohort – inmates, staff and external participants. The wall is the primary architectural element between society and the prison environment. Inmates and staff valued the existence of the wall. It was seen as the geographical separation that is needed. It is needed by the inmates to know they are doing time and being punished. It is needed by the staff as a liminal space between their life outside and their role inside. Inmates and staff felt the wall had to be a deterrent. It could not be porous and had to provide enclosure of all the happenings of the prison life. External participants felt that there was more opportunity for the wall to be treated in a way that allowed for a more fluid connection between community and prison environment.

CDA3. Appearance of the Prison as a Whole

Staff were not highly concerned about design aesthetics. The prison being functional, safe, and efficient for all was their primary concern. Inmates had a more personal approach to design aesthetic – as mentioned before; they are focussed on doing their time and not highly concerned about the architectural aesthetic. They are concerned more for their personal space of the cell and the general environment to support their purposeful progression through their term.

Inmates and staff approach to the 'relationship with the immediate built environment' was limited to their understanding of the enclosed space of the prison. The approach to this criterion was the inevitability of the prison being what it is. It is – what it is.

Staff and inmates expressed views already canvassed above about the impression about the prison from the inside – It has to feel like a place separated from the rest of society.

CDA4. Accommodation and Cell Blocks

Inmates felt very strongly about the number of people to a cell. Single person cells were described as the ideal. Cells with more than one person meant that the daily life of the inmate was one of consistent management of relationships with their other cell mate. Remand was the worst under these arrangements with the coming and going of cell mates and the not knowing the nature of the other person.

Staff were sympathetic to the cell conditions of the inmates – particularly in the older prisons where the cells were small and without the full set of sanitary amenities.

Cells were not discussed in terms of being a standard size. Numbers of people to a cell, the size of the cell, and the extent of the amenity in the cell made up the responses. In a general sense – the older jails had small cells and were generally considered to be too small for the number of people they housed. Minimum security cell arrangements were seen as (mostly) being ideal in terms of size and number of people to a cell.

Cell equipment and ablution amenity was noted as being quite poor in the older maximum and remand prisons. Inmates spoke of their current and other prisons where this was typical (Goulburn, Bathurst). Cell designs in a modern facility were considered more favourably. Inmates at the minimum-security prisons spoke favourably of the cell arrangements that offered higher agency for the individual.

Inmates and staff indicated 40 inmates per block was appropriate. Smaller blocks were thought to be more sociable as inmates could manage personal relationship within the block.

CDA5. Content and Functionality

Adjustment to age, gender, and security level was not discussed as connected. Age was only discussed by staff in the context of affordances for older inmates. Inmates were not focussed on issues of age. They, and staff were conscious of security level, the transition of the inmate from one to the other, and the change in affordances at each level. Inmates expected an easing of the control of their daily activity as they progressed and spoke of corresponding changes in the architecture. This was an expected aspect of moving through the system.

A number of inmates expressed an alternative view to the conventional approach to how an inmate progressed. Instead of there being a shock and awe introduction (as a deterrent), an easing into the system was thought to offer a centering of the individual – providing a settled start to a new term of punishment.

As mentioned previously in 14 – ‘Analogy to motifs typical of the outside world’, inmates and staff are keen to keep the separation between the outside and prison world. It is not that the inside world should not represent the functions of the outside world, it is just that they need to be separated. Inmates valued participating in outdoor world activities (TAFE, education, industry) as a means for them to purposefully and meaningfully progress through their term.

Program diversity was discussed in a prison’s capacity to provide for the inmates. Inmates noted that the capacity varied from prison to prison. Remand was seen as not providing sufficiently in the inmate’s eyes. They acknowledged the transient nature of remand prisons limited the offering and how inmates weren’t

expected to be around long enough to participate. Staff were similarly conscious of the lack of amenity for programs in remand.

Second to inmate's connection with family, is their connection with faith. Faith is seen as a common activity and there was a broad acceptance of other faiths and a feeling that multi-faith common space is a valuable space in the prison. Indigenous inmates spoke similarly about spaces being available for them to connect with the brothers. The indigenous inmates interviewed felt that their time in prison was an opportunity to make connections, share culture, and to learn language. It was also an opportunity to share culture with the younger men. The design opportunity for common spaces in the remand, high, and medium security is visits, and faith (culture).

External participants felt that links with external institutions is desirable for inmate's integration with society. Predominately, inmates and staff could not see how links with external institutions could be made other than those that are already established and working. Some staff actively took steps to introducing external institutions through their roles as educators and librarians.

Apart from visits, inmates and staff do not see the inclusion of the public as a positive thing (even visits are not always seen as positive – see previous). Separation is valued both by the inmates and staff and the inclusion of the public is seen as a distraction.

Spatial communication and mobility are seen by staff as safe and efficient movements of inmates. Inmates approach to spatial communication and mobility is at the individual scale. Inmates are consistently aware of the social dynamics of the yard and wings. Most were conscious of the control over their movements without ever being alone.

Key architecture descriptions to take forward:

- Near the community. Within the community. An urban buffer is required.
- It should not pretend to be anything than what it is.
- Public integration is not desired – it is thought of as a distraction to the life of the prison (purpose and safety)
- The size of the prison is not the issue – it is the size of the wings and yards that matter.
- Functionality needs to be legible in the spatial organisation.
- 'Views/aspect' should be internally focussed

- The prison should not have the motifs of the outside world but could function like the outside world. 'it might not look like a village – but it could function like one'
- The wall is valued as a psychological/social divide

3.4 SCRIPTS: THE 'DESIGN ATTRACTORS'

3.4.1 Introduction

Scripts are the final part of the qualitative study and represent the findings and are a contribution to new design knowledge about the prison environments in the context of citizenship. They are the final phenomenological interpretation of stakeholder concerns under the main thematic grouping of the study. The construction and application of script in this research draws from Bruno Latour's concept of 'scripts' as a 'describing the delegation of action by artifacts' (Leurs 2011). In this study, they take on a reverse-engineering of Latour's notion of scripts where his role for them is to describe the action or embedded role/meaning an artefact. Leurs (2011) uses the example of the paper coffee cup with its script being 'dispose of me after use'. Scripts in this study are the culmination of the phenomenological study findings that then inform the design concepts.

In this study a single script could inform a concept design. Equally a combination of scripts can achieve a deeper narrative of a concept. They are the finalisation of the qualitative study and the portal to the practice component in the following chapter. Each script has a title and an accompanying design hypothesis.

The following diagram locates the scripts under the primary codes. The tables following the diagram are a summary of the scripts titles.

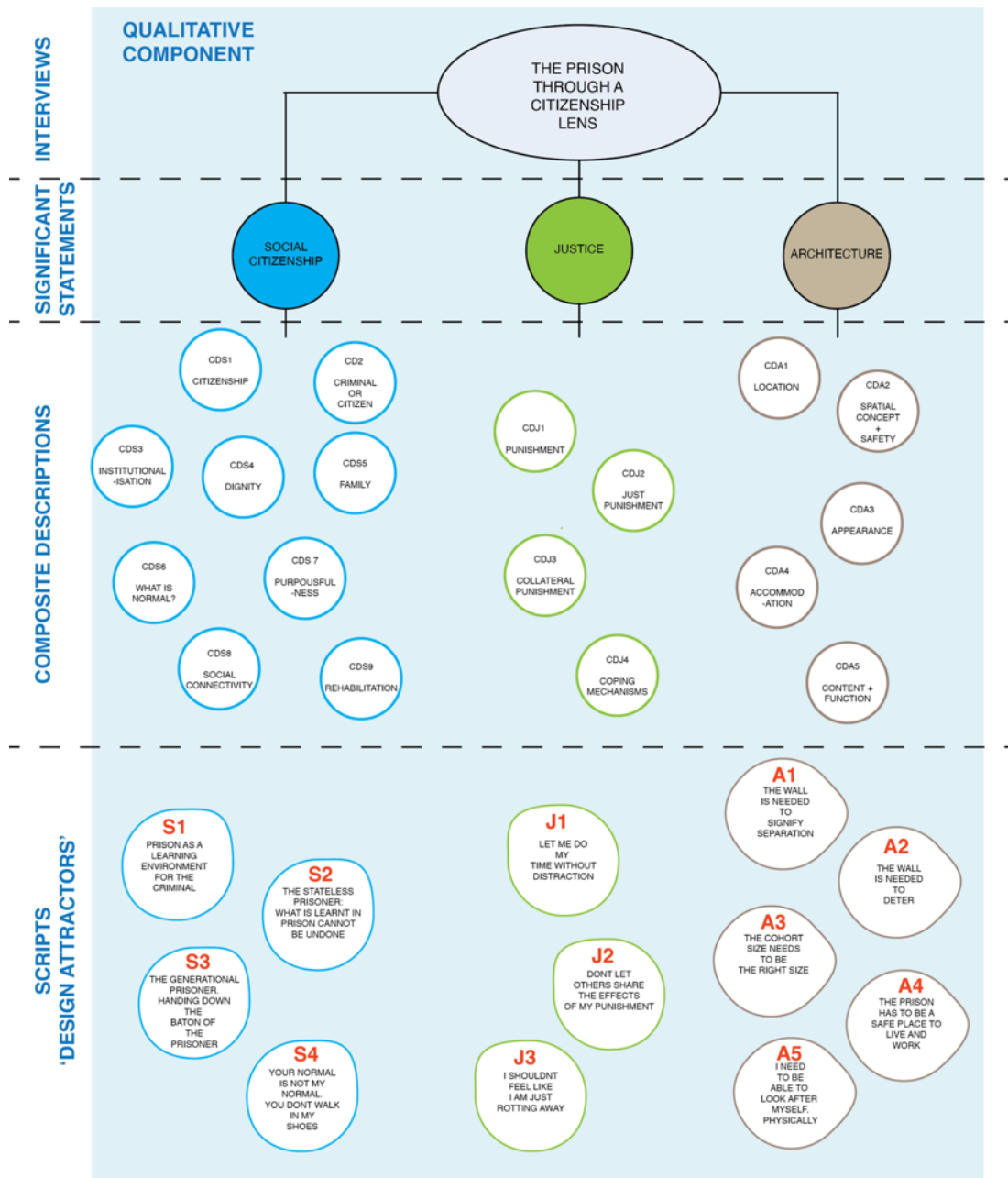


Figure 3-3. Scripts

Table 3-7. Social Citizenship – Script Titles

Social Citizenship	Script
S1	Prison as a learning environment for the criminal
S2	The stateless prisoner. What is learnt in prison cannot be undone
S3	The generational prisoner. The handing down of the baton of the prisoner
S4	Your normal is not my normal. You don't walk in my shoes.

Table 3-8. Justice – Script Titles

Justice	Script
J1	Let me do my time without distraction
J2	Don't let others share in the effects of my punishment
J3	I shouldn't feel like I am just rotting away

Table 3-9. Architecture – Script Titles

Architecture	Script
A1	The wall is needed to signify separation
A2	The wall is needed to deter
A3	The prisoner cohort size needs to be the right number
A4	The prison needs to be a safe place to live and work
A5	I need to be able to look after myself. Physically and mentally

3.4.2 Social Citizenship Scripts

Social Citizen Concern 1 (S1) - Differential Association 1. Prison as the learning environment of the criminal

- *The effect of incarceration: The erosion of (any) pro-social skills to be replaced with deviant-social skills (crim university)*

S1 Design Hypothesis

Inmates and staff referred to the effect of the custodial environment as being a breeding ground for criminals. Turner (2012) identifies this 'community of the prison' as having the effect drawing the individual away from associating with the community on the outside and replacing it with an established community inside. Both inmates and staff identified a number of aspects of prison design that promoted differential association behaviour. Broadly, they pointed to the dislocation effect arising from the institutional nature of prison architecture and the inability for the individual to recognise any social meaning that would be experienced outside.

The literature (from UN Guidelines to journal articles) often call for the inside of a prison to represent the conditions of the environment outside. The programmatic functional arrangement, spatial arrangement and security of prison design limits the capacity for the architecture to achieve the 'outside environment' aesthetic and organisation. This was often a concern to the staff and inmates. They could not see how the design of a prison could look or operate like the outside if it was to operate as a prison. The issue is the overriding emphasis on aligning the architecture with the need to accommodate groups of people securely and afford the amenity of moving them around the prison efficiently.

Whilst most of the participants struggled to imagine how the inside could imitate the outside in terms of design, a key shift to the thinking about the planning of a prison of continuing citizenship was identified by one of the participants noting; 'It doesn't have to look like a village, but it should function like one'. It is a good place to start the thinking about how design can begin to be thought of as having meaning drawn from the outside world, but not necessarily looking like it. The design hypothesis considers the vernacular of the Australian regional town plan as the portal to design. It draws from the participants' views and offers contrast to institutional planning of functional/security focus.

The 'town plan' approach adopts a generic conceptual approach that can be observed whether rural or urban and is common to many places in Australia and to other cultures. The 'high-street' is the primary hierarchical organising element of a central spine to which commercial, and government properties are located. There is a way in and a way out via this street. It is never a dead end. Moving away from the high street, residential and faith properties are found and then schools further away

from the high street (but within contact of the residential zone). Industry is often in its own zone on the perimeter of the town.

- Consider spatial organisation of Australian urban and town planning towards an approach to architectural master planning – typically in both urban and country settings, residential is organised around a central commercial/community hub with education on the residential perimeter and industrial located beyond the residential zone.

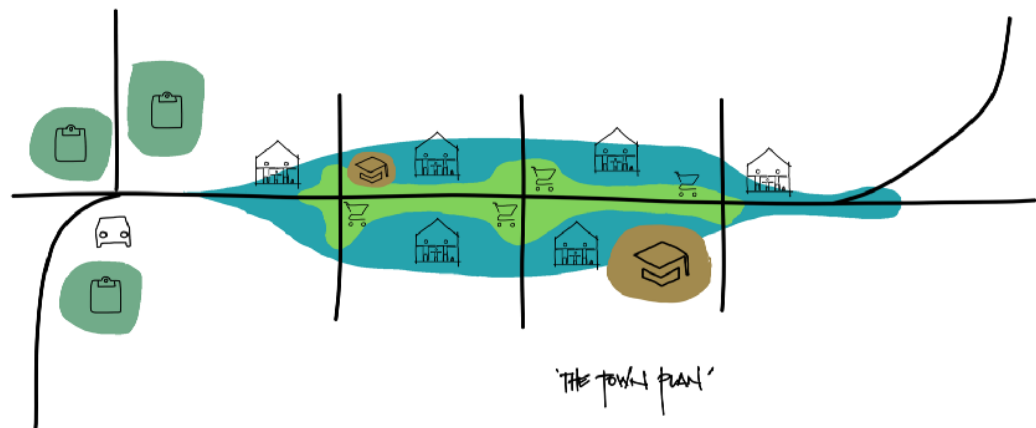


Figure 3-4. Town plan diagram. A central spine or – high street organises the hierarchy of spatial organisation.

- Consider alternative scales and form of dwelling to create a closer resemblance to identifying with a place of domestic belonging – Given the logistics of accommodating large cohorts of men in one location, consider smaller ‘wing’ numbers to manage the size, form, bulk, scale and material application to the accommodation buildings

Social Citizen Concern 2 (S2) – Differential Association 2. What is learnt in prison cannot be undone. The ‘stateless inmate’.

- *The effect of incarceration leading to institutionalised behaviours: A growing reliance on the prison as a sustaining environment.*

Inmates and staff often spoke of the inmate that could not exist on the outside. The weight of the responsibility of being a normal citizen was too much and there were many stories of inmates that committed a crime just so they could return to what they were comfortable with as the prison environment. The more these inmates were exposed to the institutional effects of the environment, the more they relied on it as being their normal.

S2 Design hypothesis

The objective of this hypothesis is for the custodial environment to be less of a culture shock between the inside and outside. The participants noted that the prison environment being so abstract to the external environment to the point where a person identified clearly in either one. Similar to Turner's observation of prisoners choosing the citizenship of prison in the previous concern, a choice can be made to be a member of the internal society or not. The design hypothesis for this concern is that the custodial environment needs to offer opportunities for social connection/interaction so that the alignment with prison citizen or maintaining identify with citizenship on the outside is not an obvious choice.

A design objective for this concern is to establish spaces that facilitate pro-social engagements without being prescriptive through casual, purposeful activity at free time. The idea is to discretely draw attention away from the 'institution' and directly focus on social interaction. In a sense, changing the context through the architecture to afford social engagement.

One way to look at a change in context is to offer environments that are specifically focussed on how genders inter-relate and get on. Men communicate shoulder to shoulder rather than face to face (Unknown 2019). Elements that facilitate this method of communication are expected to be applied in parts of the prison that do not engage with specific programs. Opportunity for design intervention is expected in the common spaces internal to the wings and external space of the yard where shoulder-to-shoulder is made possible. Internal interventions may include food preparation. External interventions may include amenity for tending to food/native plantings or native apiary.

Social Citizen Concern 3 (S3) – Differential Association 3. The fear of the generational criminal.

- *Punishment extends beyond the individual – it has a ripple effect.*

Inmates and staff often spoke the effect of the prison on their children. This was mostly in the context of the visitors centre and the potential for the role of criminal being passed on through the generations. Much of the concern was attributed to body movement and how the various restrictions applied to both inmate and family.

Other aspects were the identification of the inmate through the clothes he was wearing.

S3 Design hypothesis

Inmates and staff expressed fear that somehow, it is possible to pass on criminality through the generations. The opportunity for passing on the baton of criminality is through the family visits. This fear throws up conflicting feelings about

what the visits should look and feel like by both staff and prisoners. Whilst there were views that visits could be more sympathetic to the needs of the family affording better amenity for intimacy, there was also an underlying fear that visits should not in any way allow the child to think that prison is attractive or a life path. Inmates and staff thought that prison should be a deterrent in a broad sense, but they wanted to spend quality time in a space that placed a focus on the family unit.

The challenge for the design is to uncouple the visits facility from the broader prison complex. Visits are always behind the wall. The design challenge is to create the effect of the visits not being a place in a prison, but a meeting place with focus on the act of gathering, communicating, and sharing. The added complication to this is the variations of visits protocol across correctional centres and prisoner classification.

The design hypothesis is visits need to be understood as, not being part of the prison, but still be part of the prison. External participants noted that there should be greater interaction between the internal prison environment and external. Visits possesses an opportunity to re-think their purpose and aesthetic. They need to be seen as something other than a place to meet a family member in green or a jumpsuit. The concept is to break the social connection of 'prison' so that the younger generations relate to time with the parent rather than a future life.

Social Citizen Concern 4 (S4) – Your 'normal' is not my 'normal'.

- *The concept of 'normal' did not correlate with a person's life outside and inside. What is understood as having the qualities of 'normal' did not correlate with the individual's concept of 'normal'. 'Normal' is a fluid subjective notion that holds meanings beyond the imagination of any one person.*

Inmates and staff both had their own versions of this concern. For inmates, a normal life that represents what is considered 'normal' in general society is not something that is readily available to them. Discussion around trying to achieve a recognition of normality inside the prison often transcended to conversations of the inmate cohort typically coming from lower socio-economic backgrounds, gangs, drugs, homelessness and mental health. The conversations often questioned whose concept of 'normality' was relevant. It certainly wasn't the architects (or even the academic's)

Staff noted that their 'normal' was a constant task of maintaining two distinct identities. They could not take their normal day-to-day experiences from life outside into the prison as they saw this as an opportunity for exploitation by inmates or even other staff. The staff are unique as they experience two life-world normalities that they work hard to maintain an impenetrable divide.

S4 Design hypothesis

This is a complex design problem as it relates to understanding design and existential perceptions of others (and others speaking of others). The interviews highlighted the trouble with designing for 'normality'. Many of the inmates noted that they or the people around them come from troubled and challenging backgrounds with multiple periods in prison. They saw this as 'normal' – not good, or desirable, but inevitably normal. They also noted that this would likely remain as 'normal' in some form – it was just the way it was going to be – maybe not coming back to prison, but almost certainly not being able to move out of the backgrounds that they came from. Their normal was not likely to change, and my normal was (made) clearly not relevant as a designer in the interviews.

Designers have the potential of layering their own moral/aesthetic design aspirations (McNeill 2006, p. 49; Rapoport 1990, pp. 15-6) onto the end-users of their designs. The design hypothesis is less a hypothesis and more a practical and ethical positioning of the research. It is impossible to fully understand another's 'normal' and less so to assume that design can create 'normal' environments. The key take-out from this concern is to acknowledge and respect the lives of others regardless of whether they do not align with the designer (which is only a remote possibility anyway given the demographic differences between the prisoner population and university-educated designers). The hypothesis is one of positioning practice rather than designing for. In this research, there still needs to be a focus on 'citizenship', but methods that acknowledge, respect, and facilitate other's normal.

3.4.3 Justice Scripts

Justice Concern 1 (J1) – Needing to know you are doing time – without distraction

- *Punishment is time away from society. Focus on being able to get through (the period of incarceration – or workday).*

All inmates were intent on doing their time. They acknowledged that they had wronged society and they were focused on getting through their time and exiting the prison as soon, and as best as possible. Concepts of engaging with the public or integrating with the public were seen as being a negative thing (except just prior to release). Inmates did not want to be distracted by issues of the outside (note – they did recognise this as affecting their families). They wanted their minds to be in prison.

Staff also spoke about being focused inside. This was a professional and safety aspect of their thinking. They also saw the inclusion of the public in the prison environment as a distraction and potential threats to safety.

J1 Design hypothesis

Prisoners and staff felt that the 'wall' was significant to locating them within the custodial environment – it reminded them that they were doing time and this was a positive thing. Its presence allowed the days to be counted. For staff it was the element between being on duty and not. It was a significant element that signified the relationship of their role in society – to protect and keep safe.

The shared attitude towards the notion of 'walls' in their meaning and need was a surprise to the researcher. On the outside they are often a symbol that mark the division between us and them. From the outside, they are often viewed in the negative sense. For those inside, the wall is highly valued and accepted as a necessity to mark the division of doing time, keeping safe, and being focused on passing time. Participants view on the wall was they could be less exclusionary and thought there was opportunity for a level of engagement between the prison community and the outside community.

Aesthetically, prison walls are rigid and upright, smooth and (mostly) solid. The design hypothesis here is to maintain the value of the wall in its meaning, but to explore a richer response to 'doing time' without taking any function away or adding any perceivable risk. There appears to be opportunities for material, construction, and markings exploration.

Justice Concern 2 (J2) – Punishment has collateral damage. Punishment extends to families and individuals not doing time.

- *Punishment extends beyond the individual – it has a ripple effect.*

Prisoners and staff both recognise that family members are impacted by the punishment being served by their spouse/father/brother. It is a complex area to consider as a concern as it reaches far into the community and into the dwellings of the relative's houses, but if it is brought into the context of the prison environment, prisoners spoke of the effect of the prison on the family by feeling a shared guilt for their crime when visiting. Both staff and prisoners offered mixed responses to family visits. They are essential to the social connection of the inmate, but they have such a high potential for psychological trauma on loved ones, that some felt that visits were not good for both the inmate and relatives.

J2 Design hypothesis

The inmates spoke of the potential for shame and indignity of the family visiting the prison. They indicated that the event of visits was traumatic for the family as they enter the prison and experience restricted actions around their incarcerated family member resulting in unsatisfactory interactions. They felt this trauma had a ripple effect into the community. The hypothesis can be similar to the S3 visits approach.

The concept is to consider visits as a place that is not part of the prison, but still part of the prison.

Justice Concern 3 (J3) – Doing time – Not rotting away.

- *Punishment is time away from society. Focus on being able to get through (the period of incarceration – or workday).*
- *The need for being purposeful: Dignity through purposefulness and not identifying as a prisoner.*

Sentenced inmates recognise that they have to do time as punishment. They also recognise that the expense of time is paying their dues for wrongs committed. Most of them also recognise that there is a pervading need for community satisfaction against them throughout general society. All this considered, they feel that it is not beneficial to society for them if they are spending their time doing nothing, or simply “rotting away”. They are all aware of the recidivism statistics and feel, that idleness in prison drives criminal differential association and institutionalisation, which in turn, fuels the recidivism rate. All the inmates interviewed valued the sense of being purposeful with their time inside for theirs and a broader benefit to the community. Those that had access to TAFE, programmes, industries, and art felt their time had purpose and that they had more opportunity for reintegration. TAFE was highly valued in the way the teachers treated the inmates as learners and not ‘crims’.

J3 Design hypothesis

Not rotting away requires design hypotheses that promote purposeful activity and personal advancement. Aligning with the design directions of concern S1 – the spatial organisation of the town plan hypothesis is expected to contribute to the inmate’s purposeful engagement with familiar daily activities of going to work, school, programs, or faith in a non-institutional way. It has a similar intent of the Scandinavian prisons, but the difference is the extension of this concept to embed meaning/familiarity of the ‘town plan’ organisation rather than the movement between different facilities set in landscape. Along with the concept of the ‘town plan’ elements of faith and ‘Tafe’ could feature prominently in the planning in a meaningful way.

A second design hypothesis applies to the ‘project of the self’ or being able to facilitate personal growth. Inmates indicated that having purpose included sharing knowledge, telling stories, growing food, keeping healthy, and being productive. A number of design elements that respond to some of these concepts are included in existing prisons. The issue was that the designs were often compromised by being an add-on or poorly thought through in terms of quality, meaning, and location. The design hypothesis here is another of ‘design practice’ – the need is to incorporate

the narrative of purposefulness in these contexts as a means to appropriately addressing them in a holistic and accessible manner.

3.4.4 Architecture Scripts

Architecture Concern 1 (A1) – The wall 1 - Separation

- *Prison should not pretend to be anything than what it is.*
- *'Views/aspect' should be internally focussed*
- *The wall is valued as a psychological/social divide*

Both inmates and staff value the existence of the wall. It acts as a value laden constructed artefact, social marker, and geographical signifier that separates the prison community and the broader community.

A1 Design hypothesis

The design response is to re-consider the wall in plan, section, and elevation. It needs to have clear messages of separation – but not as it is now in its pre-fabricated, tilt slab version (I am bringing my personal design view to this point as the designer).

The wall has social meaning and needs sufficient weight in its appearance to give that sense of separation, deterrence, but also be approachable for those that are visiting. It can't be porous – though external participants were interested in being able to pass through it to facilitate engagement between the outside and inside. Inmates and staff indicated that it can be set into a landscape as a buffer between to control the aesthetic effect between the community and the prison.

Architecture Concern 2 (A2) – The wall 2 - Deterrence

- *It should not pretend to be anything than what it is.*
- *The wall is valued as a psychological/social divide*

The wall is accepted by the inmates and staff as needing to exhibit a message of deterrence. This message is both internally and externally reflected. Being focused for inmates and staff on their day has been mentioned earlier, but it is the wall that provides that amenity. Externally, inmates and staff were conscious of the flow of younger males into the prison as a point of reference to keeping the message of deterrence to the community. "You do not want to come in here" was often mentioned as a message that the prison and wall should emanate back to society. A prison should not hide its purpose.

A2 Design hypothesis

Inmates and staff felt strongly about the wall as a deterrent. Neither inmates nor staff considered prison life as a desirable thing. Their view was the wall had to get this message out to the community as a way of stating that punishment was being metered out satisfactorily and future generations were deterred from the life within. The design direction here is to work in tandem with concern A1 to achieve a wall that separates, deters, and is compatible with adjoining environments. A way to look at it is for the wall to not even be that noticeable but still be substantial when it comes to into view.

Architecture Concern 3 (A3) – Size of the inmate cohort

- *The size of the prison is not the issue – it is the size of the wings and yards that matter.*

The size of the inmate cohort was a concern to both inmates and staff. Staff thought about this in terms safety/efficiency in controlling groups of men. Inmates thought about it as a function of being able to control and maintain their sense of self and themselves within a wing. The more inmates on a wing the focus was placed on control by staff and the more 'personalities' that had to be negotiated with on a daily basis by the inmate.

Both staff and inmates suggested a number of approximately 40 as a safe number of inmates to control and a social cohort where identity and safety can be maintained by the individual.

A3 Design hypothesis

This is less of a hypothesis, but more a response the issue of capacity. Design of the accommodation wings should allow for maximum 40 inmate cohort. The form, scale and material should be such that the accommodation wings are identifiable as a place of dwelling to increase the effect of the sense of dwelling within an identifiable group. The intent is to move away from the commercial shed like qualities observed in the NSW and Victorian precedents.

Architecture Concern 4 (A4) – Function, efficiency, response time, and safety

- *Functionality needs to be legible in the spatial organisation.*
- *The prison should not have the motifs of the outside world but could function like the outside world. 'it might not look like a village – but it could function like one'*

This was a primary concern for staff. The conversation around architecture and citizenship, for them, related to their role in keeping society safe and being able to efficiently/safely do their job inside. They have a particular focus on the capacity for sections of a prison to be isolated if there is a disturbance. Being able control a group and then get to an inmate or staff member safely who is in trouble was key to the thinking around the function of yards. Staff recognised the likely benefit of engaging with the inmates daily, but most felt separation was required for them to carry out their roles.

A4 Design hypothesis

Safety features high in the concerns for staff on prison design. A common theme was designers do not and cannot comprehend the criticality of the custodial staff day. There was a view among staff that even higher management were too far removed from the front line to properly comprehend the specific requirements for the safety of all. In the custodial staff view; response time, movement efficiency, separation between staff and inmates was essential to design considerations.

Designing for safety (apparent or not) has always taken priority in prison design. Zones, sightlines, camera views, locks, and mesh all feature prominently in the prison aesthetic. The prison aesthetic is considered a much lower priority to safety. The design hypothesis is that 'beauty' and 'safety' should not exist at the expense of each other. The hypothesis (more a practice direction) – is to strike the balance in design and test it with the staff on the ground as part of practice.

Architecture Concern 5 (A5) – Amenity for health

Inmates highly value access to outdoor spaces with equipment that they can use for exercise. The amount of equipment, type and functionality varies across prisons.

A5 Design hypothesis

Inmates often spoke of the availability of exercise equipment as the amenity for health. Consideration should be given for design elements for mental and social wellbeing. This concern can be considered in a similar context to 'S2'.

3.4.5 Script Summary and Design Context

The following table summarises the scripts and their expected design or practice focus that each attracts.

Table 3-10. Social Citizenship – Script Titles - Design

Social Citizenship	Script	Design Focus
S1	Prison as a learning environment for the criminal	Meaning Context
S2	The stateless prisoner. What is learnt in prison cannot be undone	Meaning Context
S3	The generational prisoner. The handing down of the baton of the prisoner	Meaning Context Function
S4	Your normal is not my normal. You don't walk in my shoes.	Practice

Table 3-11. Justice – Script Titles - Design

Justice	Script	Design Focus
J1	Let me do my time without distraction	Meaning Context Material
J2	Don't let others share in the effects of my punishment	Meaning Context Function
J3	I shouldn't feel like I am just rotting away	Meaning Context Function

Table 3-12. Architecture – Script Titles - Design

Architecture	Script	Design Focus
A1	The wall is needed to signify separation	Meaning Context Function
A2	The wall is needed to deter	Meaning Material
A3	The prisoner cohort size needs to be the right number	Practice Function Spatial
A4	The prison needs to be a safe place to live and work	Practice Function Spatial
A5	I need to be able to look after myself. Physically and mentally	Function Spatial

Chapter 4: Practice - Design Study

4.1 DESIGN ORIENTED SCENARIOS

In this research, 'Design-oriented scenarios' (Manzini et al. 2015, p. 129) are a mechanism to visualise the phenomenological findings of the research. In both text and drawing, they represent the phenomenological findings of the participants' viewpoints to the research questions. They are the design contribution to new knowledge of prison environments in the context of citizenship. They are *an* interpretation by *a* designer of how prisons could be when viewed in the context of citizenship by those that are directly impacted by them in their daily lives. The scenarios in this section are not the only interpretation that can be arrived at – other designers could interpret alternative scenarios. They are not meant to be definitive in their description as in '*how things are*', but rather, aligning with Foqué's approach of multiple hypothesis in action to explore '*how things could be*' Foqué (2010, p. 44). They are an interpretation of the research findings and are a mechanism to evoke new thinking and promote discussion. They should never be seen as being 'true' or 'false' and as such, several scenarios/hypothesis can exist next to each other (Foqué 2010, p. 45). The design-oriented scenarios are discussed further in Chapter 6 as a pivotal mechanism of collective input to inform future design. In practice, it is envisaged that they would be valuable as part of the strategic and early design phases of a project (Baggio et al. 2018, p. 87).

There are four design scenarios that flow from the discussion above: public entry and visits; being productive; prison contemporary aesthetic of 'civic duty'; and a way in and a path out. Their place in the overall research are visualised in the figure below.

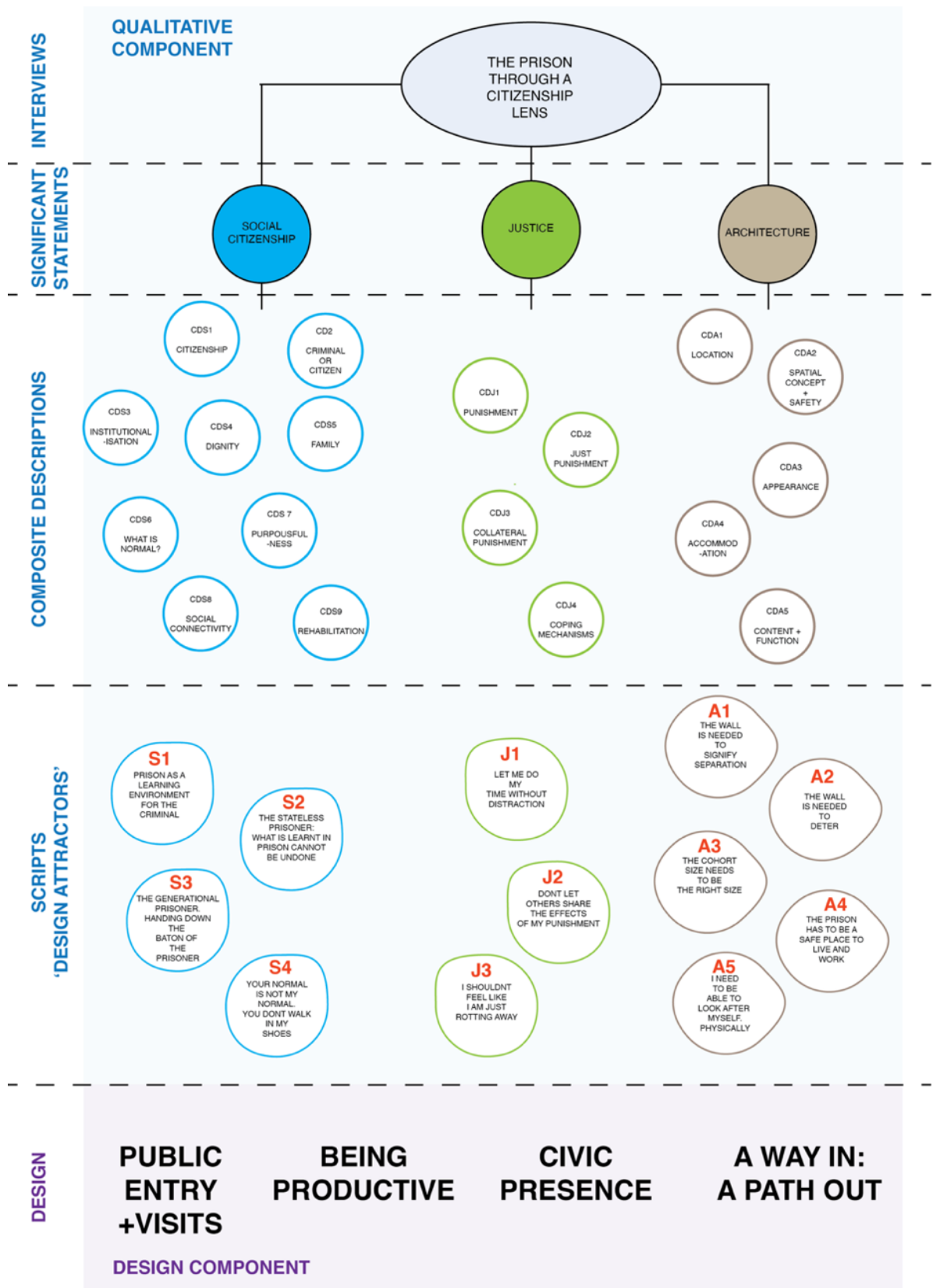


Figure 4-1. The Research. Qualitative and Design Components

Table 4-1. Design Oriented Scenarios

Scenario No.	Scenario Title	Associated Scripts
1	Public entry and visits	S2, S3, S4, J2
2	Being productive	S1, S2, S3, J1, J3, A5
3	Prison contemporary aesthetic of 'civic duty'	A2, S3
4	A way in and a path out	J1, S2

4.1.1 Public Entry and Visits

'the last fucking thing you want is relating it (the visits space) to their father. Who is in fucking prison – in a negative environment they've felt' [prisoner]

'I wouldn't have them here - I would fucking miss them. Just for the sake that they don't have to come and feel the spiritual energy that this place has. The negativity that's created in a place like this' [prisoner]

Nearly all prisons combine the entry for custodial services and visiting families together. Sally ports, custodial and non-custodial staff, official visitors and family visitors all engage with the one building complex as the entry to the centre. Prisoners often spoke of the stigma their families experienced through visiting the prison.

The concept is to provide two clear separate entry points for the operational and professional custodial services and all other visitors.

Associated scripts: S2, S3, S4, J2

The prisoners spoke of the potential for shame and indignity placed on the family visiting the prison. They indicated that the event of visits was traumatic for many families as they enter the prison and experience restrictive impositions on how they physically interact.

Prisoners and staff expressed fear that somehow, it is possible to pass on criminality through the generations. The opportunity for passing on the baton of criminality was said to be through the event of family visits in the prison environment. This fear created conflicting feelings for prisoners and staff about what the visits

should look and feel like. Whilst there were views that visits could be more sympathetic to the needs of the family affording better amenity for intimacy, there was also an underlying fear that visits should not in any way allow the child to think that prison is attractive or a life path. They wanted to spend quality time with their families without the families having to experience prison.

Visiting with children was often a concern for both prisoners and staff. Should a child be part of the visits? Often, partners needed time alone to discuss matters. Visiting parents or prisoners may need a visit without, or not wanting, the children with them and would likely require the services that can care for their children for the duration of the visits. My own observation after having visited a number of prison complexes is these facilities for Young People are often in converted buildings in proximity to the correctional centre. The intention is to incorporate these services with the 'Public Entry' intervention.

The intention is to uncouple the visits facility from the broader prison complex without any change to the operational requirement to be within the prison perimeter. The design intention is to create a meeting place with focus on the act of gathering, communicating, and sharing that is accessed from a public building, rather than the custodial portal.

The design concept repositions and re-configures the location of Visits by coupling it with a Public Entry building. It is expected to offer a defined and dignified public interface for visiting families, community organisations, and young people.

A landscaped environment in the Visits offers the amenity of an enclosed natural setting to offset the notion of being within the prison - particularly for the visiting children.

The design intervention contribution is based on the notion that citizenship and justice is not held specifically within any one individual. Both are felt and a shared between the prisoner and those they engage with, be it a family member or a visiting community organisation. The design is intended to support healthy and meaningful bonds that underpin an ongoing connectivity with citizenship and acknowledgement of time served.

Design Visualisations

The Public Entry

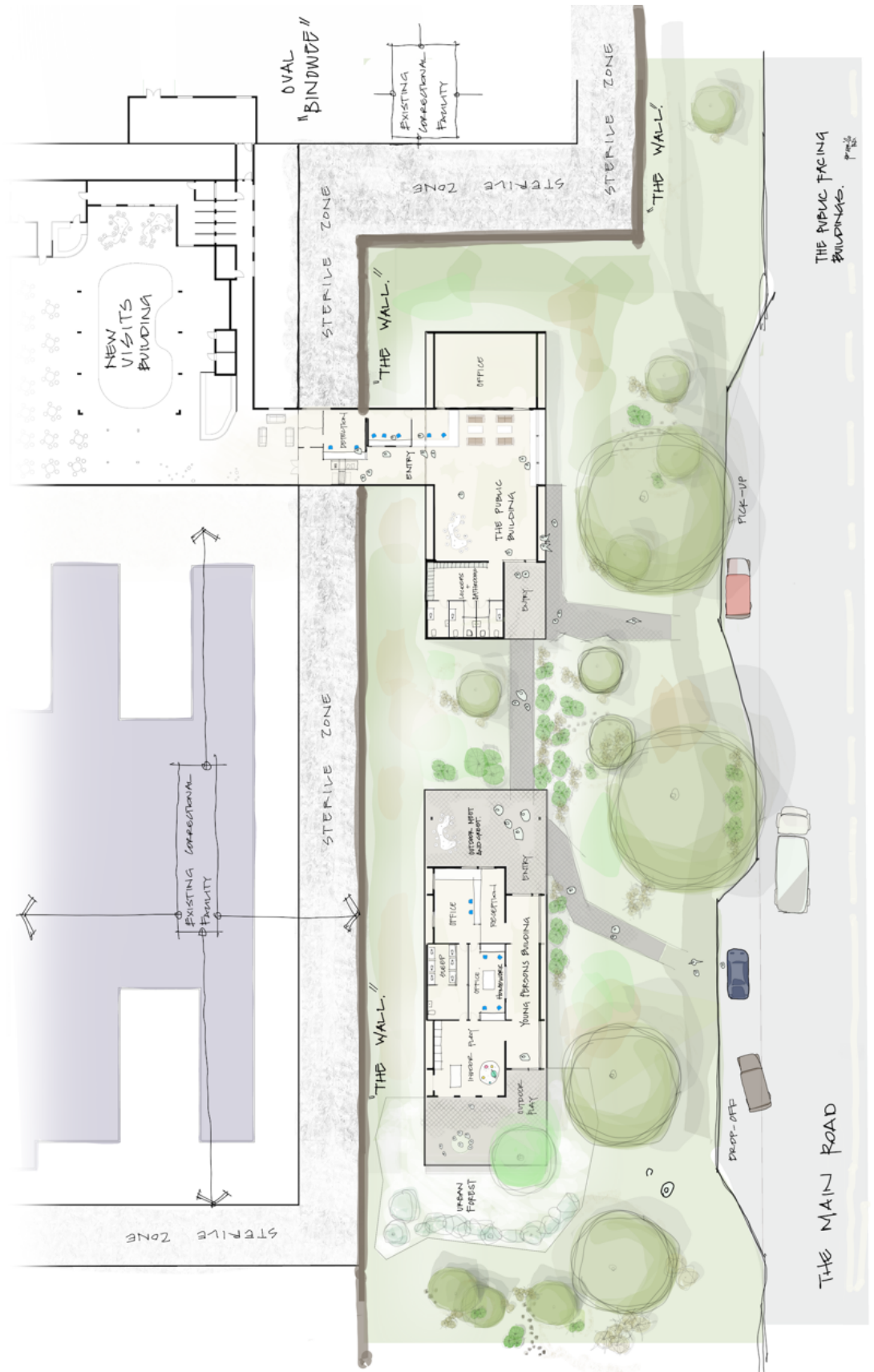


Figure 4-2. A new public entry building

Most entry buildings functions combine staff, family visits, public entry, and the sally port for the prisoner transport vehicles. This scheme separates the public entry from the custodial and situates it as an interface with the surrounding landscape/urban setting.

This plan shows a scheme that takes two existing functions in many prison facilities and reorganises them. In this scheme, there are two pavilion buildings. To the left is a young person's space with a function for care that is often provided by not-for-profit organisations offering temporary care of young people for people visiting prison. On the right is a public reception building that then leads to the visits facility. The public reception building is intended for all non-justice activities that a prison engages with. These include family visits and external organisations that provide life and social skills activities such as 'Park Run', sports refereeing courses, Indigenous planting, land care and NSW Volunteer Fire Fighting.

The plan includes an 'urban landscape' buffer and drop-off zones but retains the presence of the wall as a backdrop to the public buildings.



Figure 4-3. Prison public entry building



Figure 4-4. Prison public entry building in urban setting

The prison entry aesthetic is scaled and formed to offer a more engaging public pavilion style interface. The intention is to retain, but shift the symbology of the prison, to be more accessible both physically and psychologically.

Visits: A Place for Young People + Family

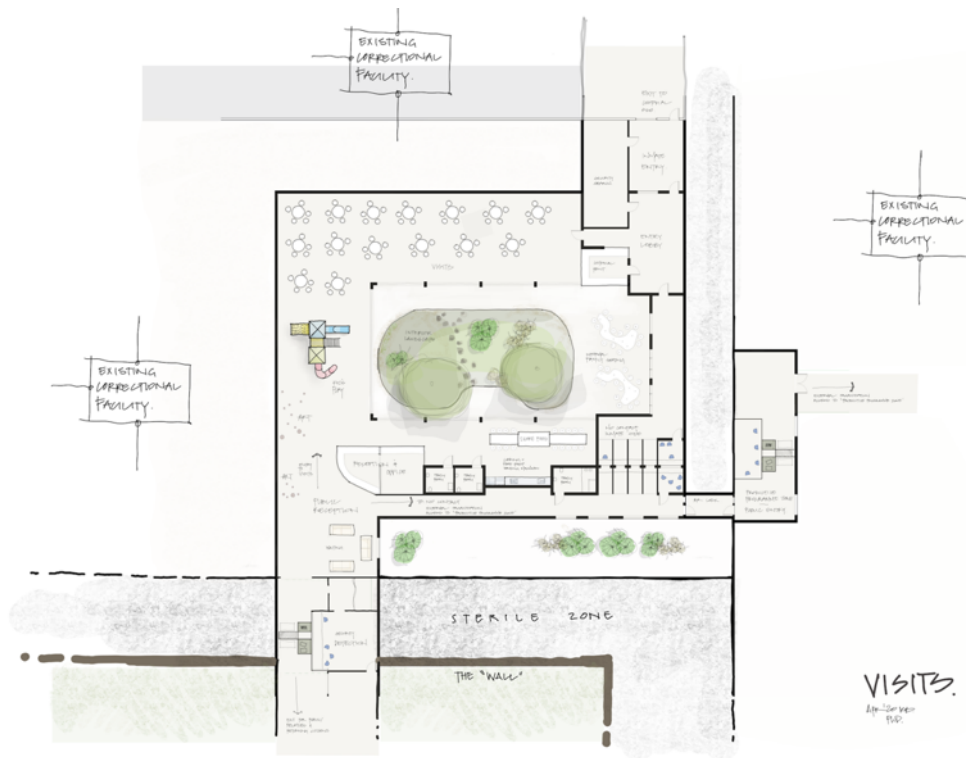


Figure 4-5. Visits facility re-imagined. Plan

This plan has a focus on a central courtyard with various modes of meeting organised around it. This design strategy allows for more personal spaces organised around a central feature rather than everyone being in the same room, which is typical of visits. The design impact intended here is the retention of the single space, but with options for more personal areas within the one space. The landscaped courtyard retains an internal focus to the visits facility that aligns with the 'interior vista' that staff and prisoners value. The courtyard also offers visual interest and an acoustic calmness to the space. It is also expected that children would be able to access the landscaped area and retain a connection with the backyards and parks of the outside.

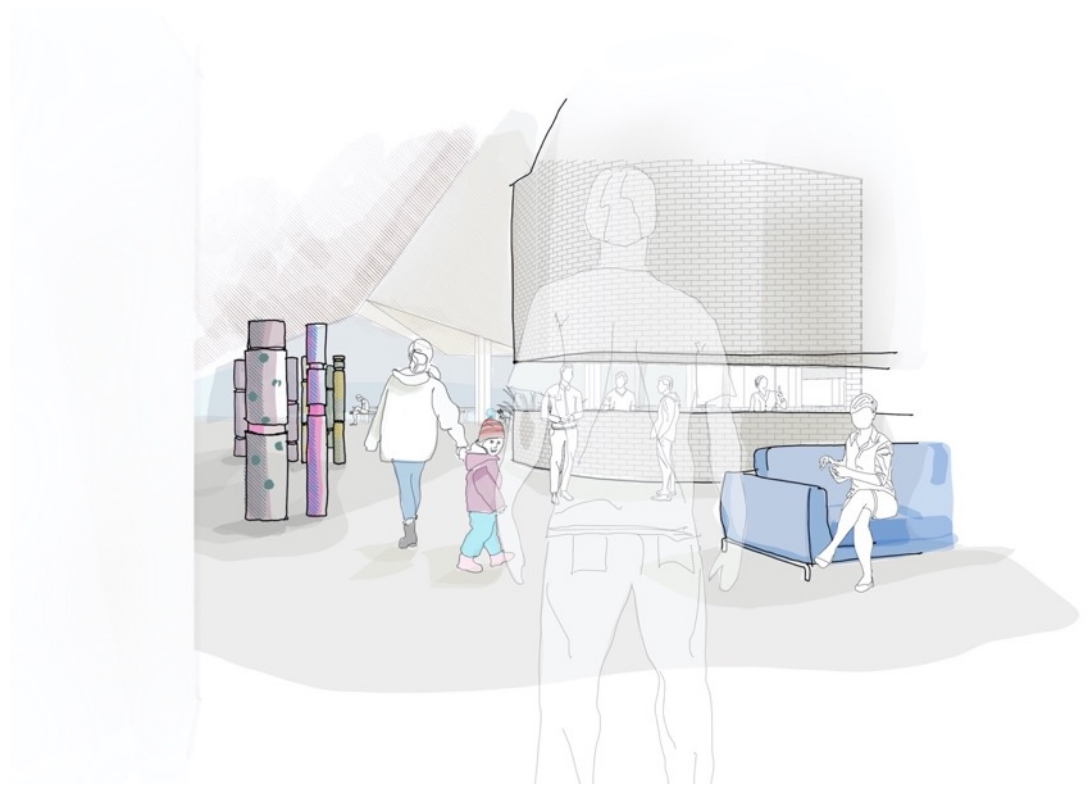


Figure 4-6. Visits reception space

This image explores a more open and approachable aesthetic to the entry to the visits.



Figure 4-7. Visits internal courtyard



Figure 4-8. Visits 'seated' area

Discussion

The design intervention contribution is based on the notion that citizenship and justice is not held specifically within any one individual. Both are felt and are shared between the prisoner and those they engage with, be it a family member or a visiting community organisation. The design is intended to support healthy and meaningful bonds that underpin an ongoing connectivity with citizenship and acknowledgement of time served.

4.1.2 Being Productive

'I think the system needs to give them something to take back to their family, to their kids' [prisoner]

'Prisons should show society that we are doing our best to um, uh, like re-educate the criminal - to give them a chance. To give them a future other than crime by doing different activities' [prisoner]

'Prison should be seen as a period of imprisonment and of growing... it should be a chance for this person to grow' [external]

Prisoners felt that it is not beneficial to society if they are spending their time doing nothing, or simply "rotting away". There was a general sense that "rotting

away” only resulted in a high potential for the return of bitter and more damaged people to society.

Associated scripts: S1, S2, S3, J1, J3, A5

The intention is to provide amenity that has the potential for the prisoner to remain active and engaged both personally and socially through interactions with established community group

There are other examples of productive amenity in prisons around the world. This intervention specifically links the new amenity with a direct relationship with the Entry Building and Visits interventions. By entering via the Entry Building and the Visits reception, it uniquely provides a tangible link with community whilst still being confined within the walls.

The new amenity offers potential for engagement with community-based organisation like; Referee training, Park Run, Pocket City Farm, Earth Care, National Parks, and Volunteer Fire Fighting. Prisoners and staff indicated the benefits of being able to engage with community-based organisations as a participant of organised activities whilst inside. It is expected there is potential for the prisoner to continue the engagement with the same organisations on the outside. It is the exercising of citizen like behaviours inside that can be directly transferred to the outside is the intended contribution of this design intervention. The intervention has a broad reference to the need to be productive but is also aimed at the concerns for the institutionalised prisoner by encouraging opportunities for pro-social engagement.

Design Visualisations: Amenity for being productive and healthy

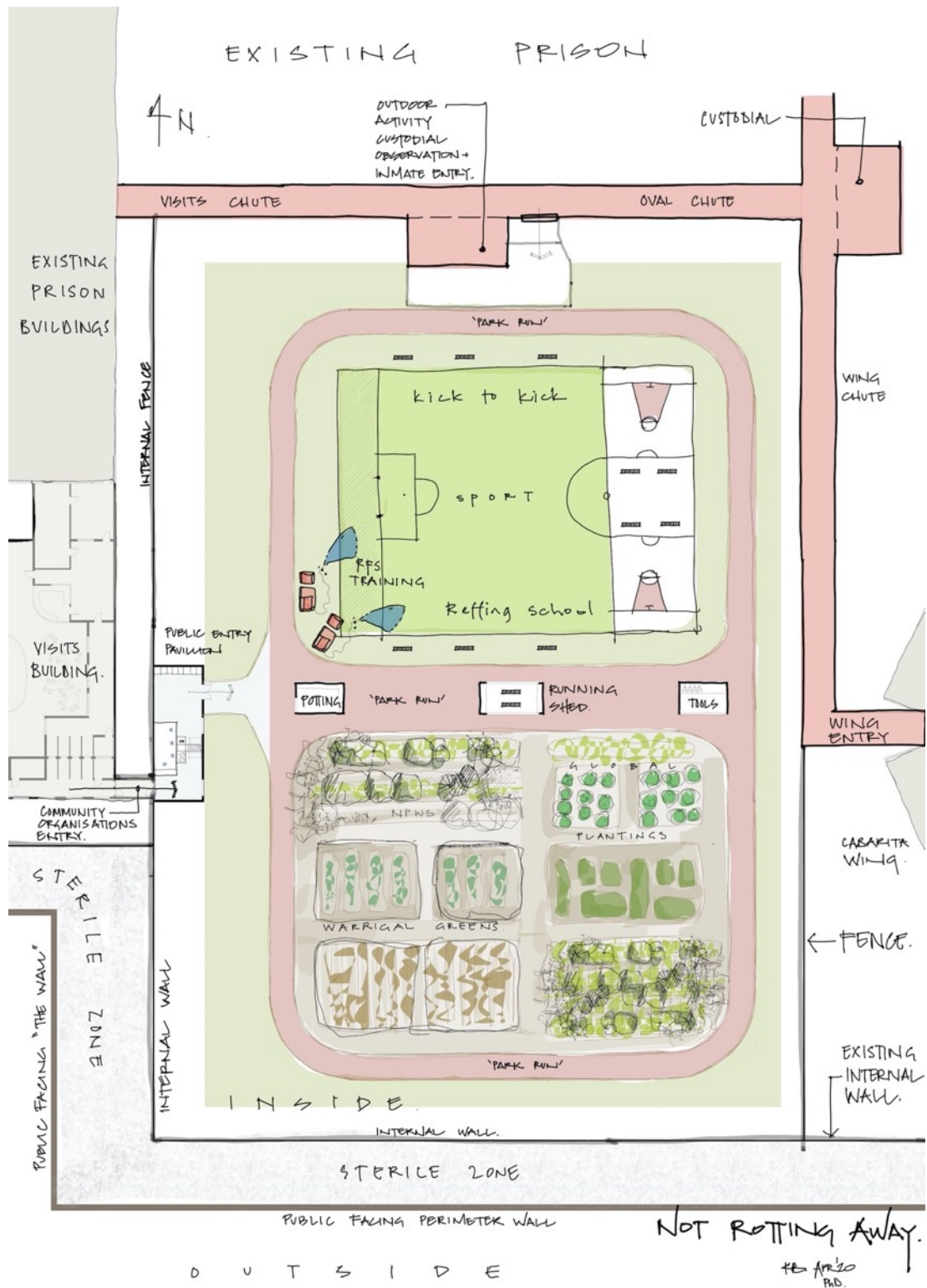


Figure 4-9. Plan for productivity and health

This plan offers potential for engagement with community-based organisations like; Referee training, Park Run, Pocket City Farm, Earth Care, National Parks, and Volunteer Fire Fighting. Prisoners and staff indicated the benefits of being able to engage with community-based organisations as a participant of organised activities whilst inside. It is hoped there is potential for the prisoner to continue the engagement with the same organisations on the outside. The intervention has a broad reference to the need to be productive, but is also aimed at the concerns for the institutionalised prisoner by encouraging opportunities for pro-social engagement.



Figure 4-10. Concept for being productive and healthy

Design Visualisations: Amenity for wellbeing and spirituality

'Now, the Aboriginal guys, their sense of spirituality of course is to be able to know, touch...and feel identified with the land. In maximum security here. The guys can't even see the bloody stars' [staff]

'Even your family understand you're in jail, you understand that you're in jail so you have to block the outside world. But it's hard for them because they're the ones outside looking in. We, we're inside, there's nothing to look out too' [prisoner]

'I know personally, if they designed, let's say - an Islamic Hall, for us properly - Mate! - you will find even the worst of criminals will look after that place' [prisoner]

Spiritual and mental wellbeing was a broad concern for prisoners in terms of how they maintained themselves whilst incarcerated. The state of mind and soul was often spoken about in terms of personal qualities that contributed to being a good citizen. The capacity to maintain both was considered a significant contributor to your capacity to successfully return to society.

Associated scripts: S1, S2, S4, J1, A1, A5

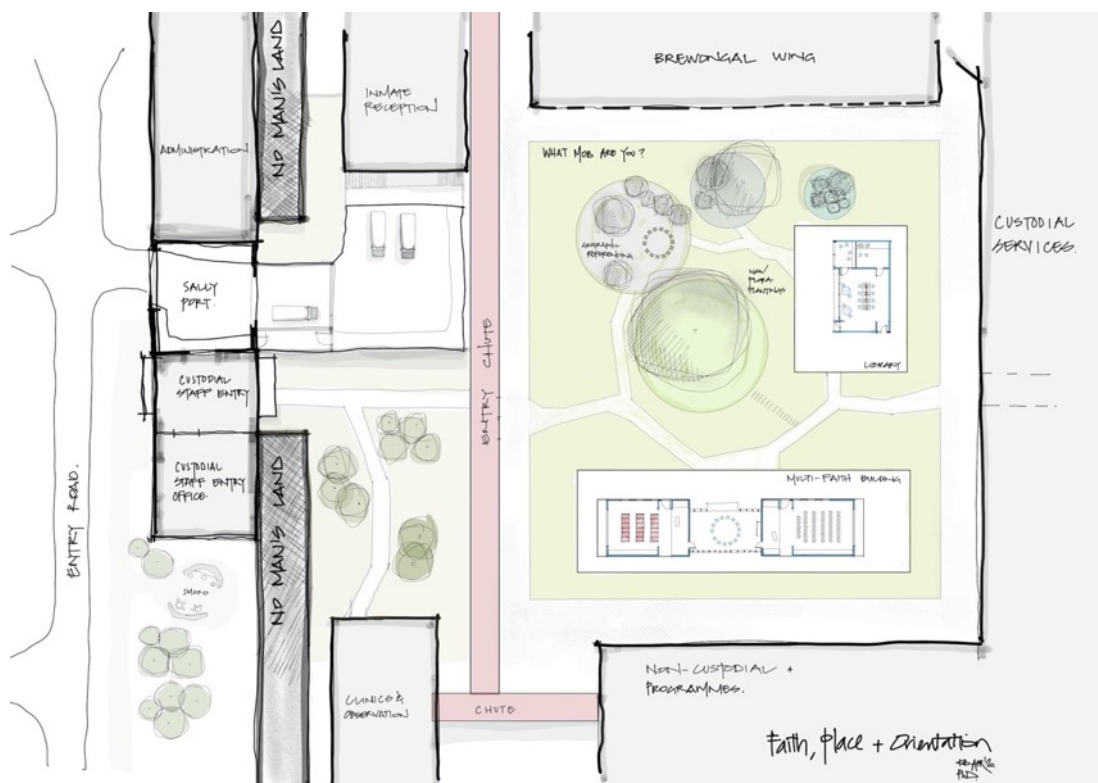
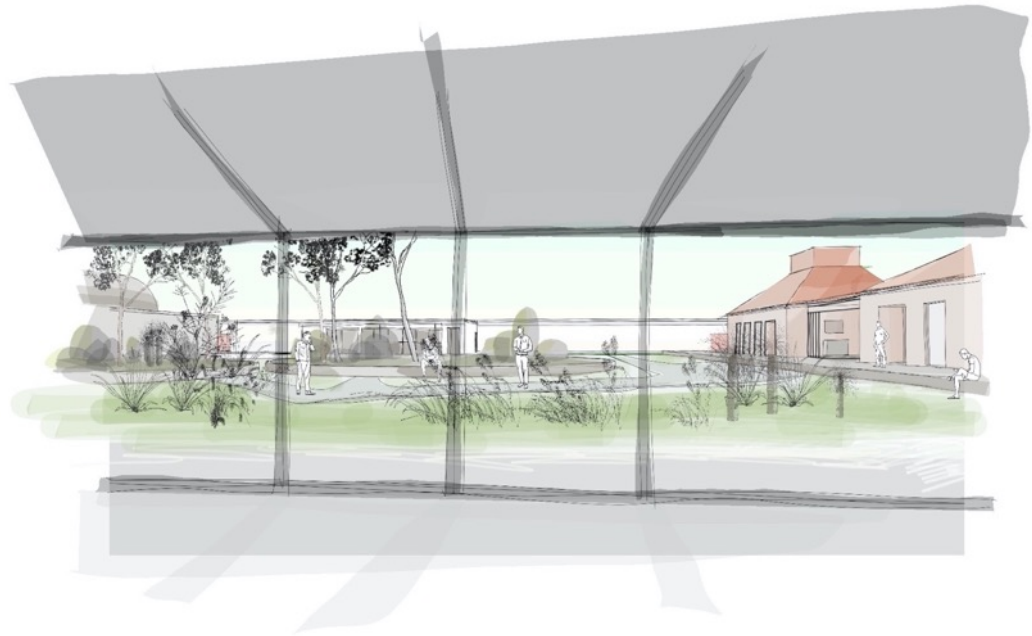


Figure 4-11. Wellbeing and spirituality

Keeping with faith, Country and knowledge was considered an integral part of being a citizen. Prisoners indicated that access to a defined location that allowed people to connect and practice their beliefs would strengthen the bonds of continued connection between the individual and community.

This plan offers an open space with multifaith and library adjacent to the custodial entry to the prison and the 'first night' wing. Visual connection is immediately available to things that matter – particularly at a time of intense emotion. Regional plantings are included in this plan as a visual cue and connection to country.



Peace + faith.
 - connections.
 + Apr 16
 P.D.

Figure 4-12. Custodial entry. Views to library and multi-faith.

Discussion

Being productive, healthy, and maintaining connection with faith were all aspects of prison life that prisoners and staff recognised as being beneficial to the wellbeing of the prisoner-self. Across all these types of amenity, it was observed that the provision for this varied, adhoc, or an adapted from some other function. The contribution of these visualisations is to bring to light the concerns of across the participant cohort – particularly the prisoners in terms of meaningful places and their qualities.

4.1.3 Prison as a Contemporary Symbol of Civic Duty

The concept of ‘civic duty’ relates to the concerns of the prisoners and staff in how the prison is perceived from the outside. From the prisoner’s aspect, they felt that the prison should have an aesthetic of deterrence. In recognition of their situation, they held the view that the prison should send a message to the community warning them against doing wrong.

Staff held similar views to the prisoners about the aesthetic. Their reasons were not from an ‘I did wrong – don’t you do wrong’ of the prisoner cohort, but one of a public compliance aspect. Their practitioner experience was with the prisoner cohort and they often mentioned (with regret), the plight of the people entering the system.

They were particularly aware of the people that entered for the first time, and those that had entered repeated times. The staff observed the deteriorating nature of the individual with each custodial event.

Both staff and prisoners felt that the walls of the prison were the thing that maintained the civic message. In discussing what they should look like, 'scary – but not ugly', 'something that is impenetrable', a bit like those old sandstone prisons.

When asked what sort of presence should the prison walls present to the surrounding area, the view was that they needed to be visible, but not blatant (in your face). External participants felt that the walls could be less impenetrable. Their view was the external aesthetic should offer a level of inviting public engagement with the prison.

Associated scripts: A2, S3

Design Visualisations



Figure 4-13. Symbol of civic duty. The wall

There are three features of this visualisation for design impact:

- The material of the wall – a solid, but sculptural element of local material
- The re-configuring of the wall that is set back in an landscape buffer from the local environment, and

- The reconfiguring of the wall alignment and portals. The wall is set behind a public entrance building (7.2.3) as the public engagement portal and has a custodial portal.

Discussion

The contribution to citizenship and justice is the presence of the wall as the geographical symbol of the social contract. The aesthetic of a solid element of local material links the wall to the community and embodies the qualities the staff and prisoners feel it should have.

The reconfiguration of the wall affords the delineation of the custodial and the public approaches to the prison and aligns with other design impact areas (public entry, a path in a way out). The reconfiguration offers clarity in the separation of custodial and public, which aligns with the qualities expressed by the external participants.

4.1.4 A Way in and a Path Out.

“it might not look like a village – but it could function like one”

— Staff

Prisoners that were sentenced for an extended period spoke of being stuck in the system. The notion that there was no vision of moving through the system lead to a sense of bitterness being dormant. In a sense, there was a feeling of being contained and sedentary. There was a sense that the lack of ‘moving through’ or ‘moving to’ was antithetical to a natural motion of moving through life – whether physically or mentally.

This design intervention is a symbolic one that links in with others (the wall and the public buildings). The concept is that there is a way in through the custodial portal and an exit through the public buildings. The application of the two portals to a prison indicates a journey that has a beginning and an end-point. In the current format, most custodial facility

A staff member in one of the interviews noted that the design for a prison is that it should operate like a village. It didn’t need to look like a village, but it should work like one. This design intervention draws from that conversation. The existing setting of a single portal in and out for all things and people into a prison has the clear sense of the entry of a fortification. Once you are in, you are in - and there is only one-way back out.

This design intervention acknowledges that there are always a number of paths through a village that lead to other places - or back to where you came from. The idea is to utilise the other design intervention of the public buildings as the end of the

journey for the returning citizen. The prisoner will enter the prison in a van through the sally-port but exit via through the public buildings aligned with all the other visitors. Whilst this can be thought of as symbolic, I feel that it is a unique recognition of the end of one period of a prisoner's life and the beginning of another.

The Way In and Path Out is a mechanism that organises the functions in the correctional centre to separate public and custodial entries into the prison.

It introduces a new spatial organisation that recognises the return of a citizen after have served their sentence. It allows the new public/visits/productive space to have a connection for all visitors that are non-custodial.

The symbolic intention is to reconfigure the traditional path taken in a prison from entry and exit at the same point for everyone, to one where the returning citizen exits through a public building to re-join society.

The separation of paths of custodial and public allows:

- for a focus on custodial operations entry point without the public
- the amenity for independent access for community groups and visiting relatives without the operational activity associated with custodial staff
- a path out of the prison system that speaks to the dignity of the returning citizen by exiting the system through a public building.

Associated scripts: J1, S2

Design Visualisations

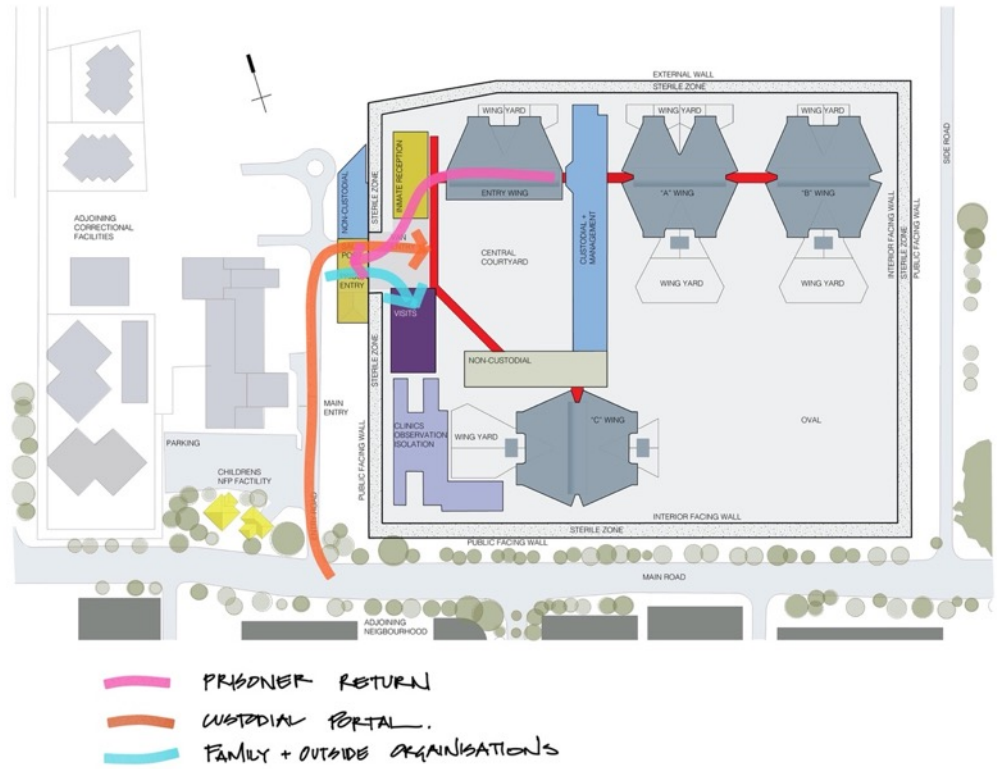


Figure 4-14. Typical portals to correctional facilities

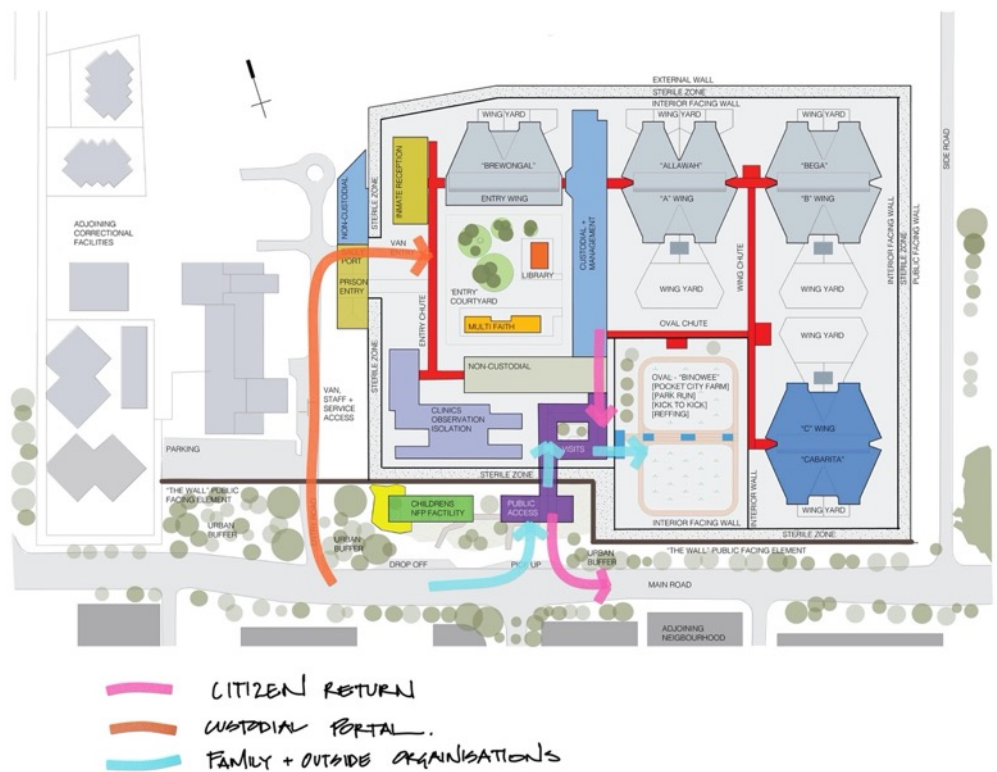


Figure 4-15. Re-imagined portals to custodial facilities

Discussion

The journey in the system from a custodial entry to re-joining society through the public buildings with the public is a nod to the personal journey and sense of self whilst serving a sentence. The two portals provide symbolic waypoints for progressing through time and the architecture of the prison

4.1.5 Combined Design Impact Visualisations

The purpose of this section is to bring together the parts of the Design Impact to a whole of a hypothetical prison design as they relate to the concerns of citizenship and architecture in this study. The following diagrams give the context of the hypothetical test site and the impact of the design interventions as applied to the existing.

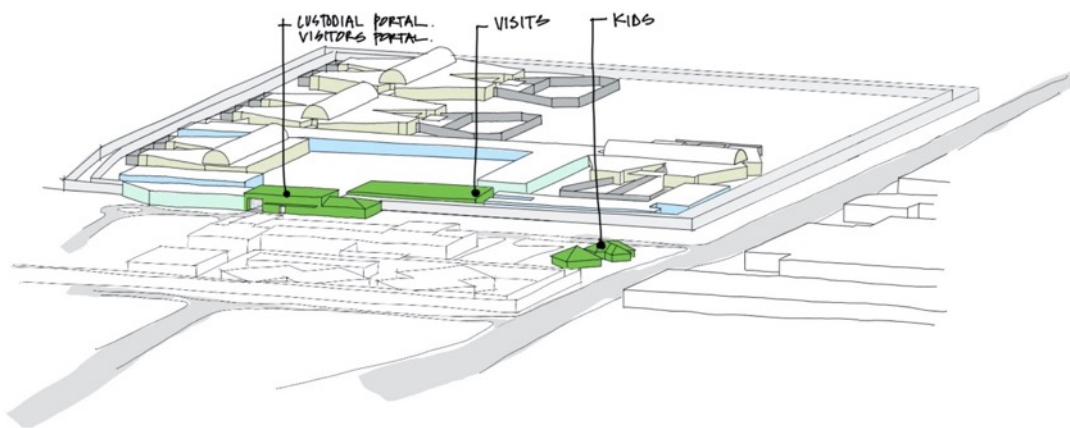


Figure 4-16. Test Site for Design Impact

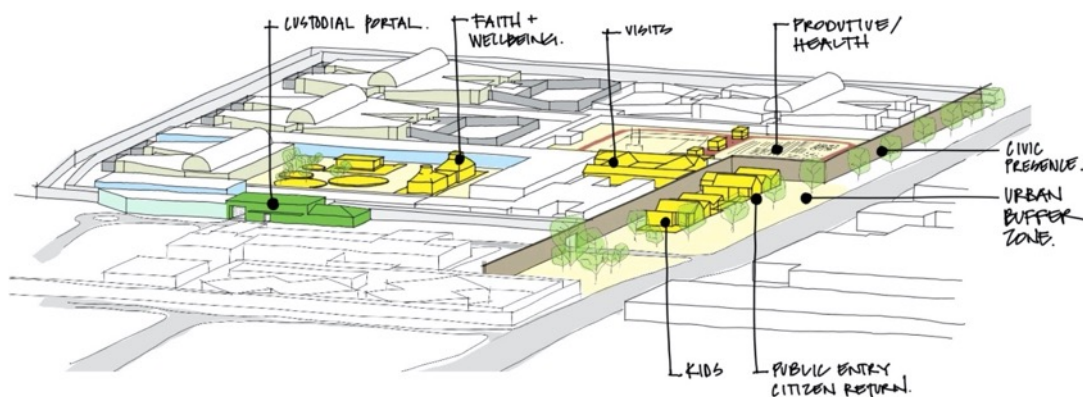


Figure 4-17. Design Impact Plan with Interventions

Chapter 5: The Exhibition

5.1 INTRODUCTION

It is common in architectural practice to present concepts to clients, colleagues, or the general public for critique, feedback, and further development of ideas towards a realised design. This research project, being a socially concerned, architectural, practice-led venture, used a similar means of presenting concepts that emerged from the research to a wider audience. This was done via an online exhibition to achieve validation of the finding and interpretations.

Creswell & Poth (2016, p. 260 Figure 10.1) outline strategies for validation in qualitative research. The strategies are organised under three lenses, 'Researcher's lens', 'Participants' lens', and 'Readers' or Reviewers' lens'. For this research, the open online exhibition served as a validation through the 'readers' lens'. Readers responded to the research findings as they were generated in words and images (ibid). This approach allowed visitors to the website an opportunity to view the research, its methods, descriptions of the findings, and interpretations in text and images. Anyone visiting the online exhibition had the opportunity for anonymous feedback via an online form.

5.2 EXHIBITION MANAGEMENT

Set up

The researcher authored the online exhibition. It was open for viewing and comment for approximately five weeks.

Visits

The following graph shows the interactions with the website and the source of the interactions. In total, there were 137 visits. The research was promoted in social media through the researcher's personal accounts and through direct emails to a number of prison-related NFP/NGO organisations. As apparent in the graph, social media did not draw many people to the site. Most of the visits were direct to the site, which is attributable to the email approach or word of mouth from those that were aware of the research and discussing it with others.

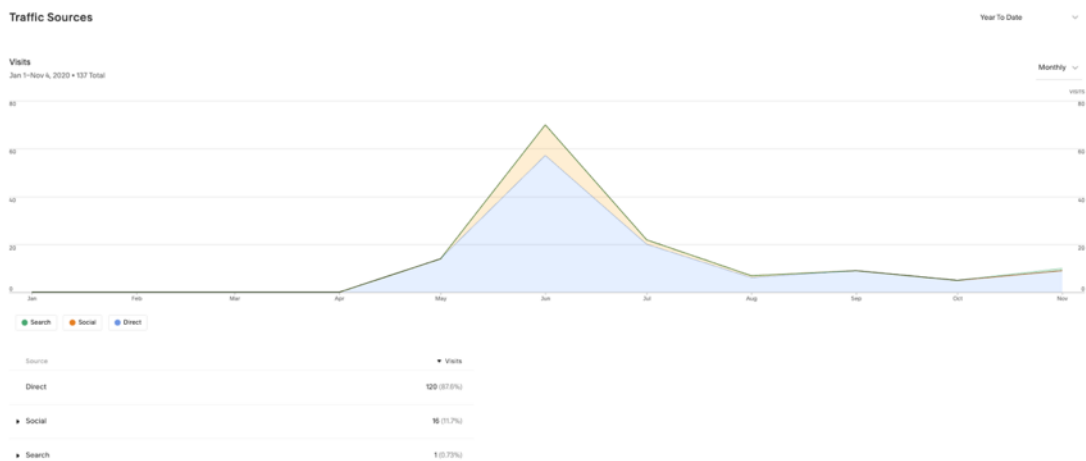


Figure 5-1. Online Exhibition Analytics

Feedback Mechanism

The web site included a research feedback facility that was open to all to contribute to for a limited time. The forms did not require the respondent to disclose their identities. Comments were forwarded directly from the website to the researcher's student email address.

Phone and email contact was also included for those that did not wish to provide feedback via the website.

It should be noted that while the website was publicly accessible and it was promoted online, the number of responses was less than expected. Originally, it was imagined that the accessibility of the site with the opportunity for anonymous responses would attract quite a number of responses. On reflection, while an online webpage is useful in terms of access and getting information out, it is less effective in inviting people to respond. This was not expected at the time of publishing the webpage. It should be further noted that the feedback that was received was relevant and a valuable critique of the study outputs.

All feedback is included in the following section, Responses and Outcomes.

THE AESTHETICS OF CITIZENSHIP

[Home](#) [Research](#) [Design](#) [Contact](#)

Research Feedback

The purpose of bringing the research to light through the website is for people in the general community to be aware of the research and for them to have the opportunity to comment on the designs that have emerged from the research. As you have seen, I have spoken with people within the prison system to get their views on how citizenship and just punishment should present as architecture. The objective of having this available to a broader audience is to open up the opportunity for a wider response to the research to inform the final design concepts. Whilst this is open to all, I am particularly interested in the views of families, relatives, and organisations that represent these groups. Whilst all comments are welcome, the context of the aesthetics and symbols of citizenship and just punishment is sought.

I expect you will feel most comfortable with commenting on the designs that are parts of the prison system you have experience or knowledge of. Please do not feel that you are limited to this. As noted in the introduction page, one of the most significant reveals in this research project is the notion of 'citizenship' is not a definable entity within or held by any single individual.

The comments will be sent directly to the researcher and you will not be identified in the future research work.

Direct contact can be made via email, kevin.bradley@student.luts.edu.au

Closing date for comments will be 10th July 2020

Design 1: Public Entry and Visits Buildings

Design 2: Amenity for Being Productive

Design 3: The Wall - A Symbol of Civic Duty

Design 4: A Way In / A Path Out

General Comments

Where are you from? *

(This is optional. It provides some flow your association with the research topic.)

- Family member
- Relative
- Previous inmate
- Non-Government Organisation
- Government Organisation
- Design/Professionals
- Interested Citizen
- Other

Please describe 'other' - thanks

Thank You!

Kevin

Figure 5-2. Online Exhibition. Feedback Form

5.3 RESPONSE + OUTCOMES

5.3.1 Response

Following are the responses received during the exhibition. Responses were either in person or online. The in-person responses have been expanded to include the researcher's thoughts during the discussion with respondents. The online responses are verbatim. Both are then reviewed and discussed as an alternative script and design hypothesis in section 5.4. to offer additional insights to citizenship and prison design.

In person response

“The public building should only be for family visits”

In the discussion about this response, concerns raised were associated with prior themes of becoming part of the ‘criminal class’ and generational impact from exposure to the prison environment. The respondent was aware of, and concerned for, the impact on families from exposure to the prison environment. They contemplated the design-oriented scenario of the ‘public entry’ as being too compromised if it were to accommodate different visitor types. Their view was that the entry should only be for people who have a personal emotional connection with the one they are visiting. Their argument was that other community-based visitors who attended prisons regularly (whilst invested in the wellbeing of the people they were visiting) were of a different mindset to a child, partner, or friend. They argued that grouping families in with other types of visitors would likely result in a uniform security presence, not dissimilar to what is already in place, and there would be no perceptual change to the nature of the function even if the aesthetic suggested otherwise.

The respondent argued for the research, in future design, to consider an entry to the prison that is dedicated to family and friends, rather than a general ‘public’ building. The argument does not suggest a divergence from the composite descriptions in Chapter 3 that relate to the design. It does suggest an adjustment through an application of further sensitivity, recognising that the family is not just part of the ‘public’.

‘The architecture needs to show there is an alternative to doing things....’ [respondent]

This response referred to the design aesthetic presented by the research. The respondent accepted the intentions of the design interventions but suggested that they could offer a more aspirational aesthetic. They argued for an aesthetic that suggested that those on the inside are ‘making good’. They suggested the design might refer to the modern architecture of production, such as the ‘warehouse’. There is a clear irony in this suggestion, as the literature views the warehouse in the negative, with its connotations of mass incarceration and social separation; but it is recognised that the warehouse may be viewed positively by those in the community as a place of ‘production’ and therefore progress. Although this is the view of a single respondent, this might be a general view in the community that could be explored further. It is intriguing that the warehouse attracts both positive and negative meanings but is (without exploring it at this stage) an architectural typology that is employed by government, as some would argue.

It should be noted that the conversation did not further clarify the aesthetic of the ‘warehouse’ that the respondent was referring to. The focus was more on the

aesthetics' capacity to suggest 'industry' and 'personal progress'. It is possible that the respondent's vision of the 'warehouse' is one of the most recent industrial estates that incorporate quality urban planning and landscape architecture to achieve an attractive and cohesive precinct environment, rather than the ubiquitous bulk storage facility where people 'wait out their terms' (Victorian Government 2021).

In this case, the respondent is arguing for a general approach to the overall aesthetic of the prison. This wasn't the approach of the research, which treated the data thematically to arrive at specific design responses emergent from the qualitative study. It is not surprising that this attitude was expressed towards what a prison should look like in general. It is possible to review the data with alternative questions towards a general aesthetic in future research.

Online or Emailed Responses

Emailed Response 1

I think the whole approach is wrong headed. Yes, you can probably facilitate a sense of citizenship in the community via architecture and urban planning and maybe you could even reduce offending and imprisonment rates that way. But – by the time someone is in prison, the horse has already bolted.

You don't need the concept of 'civil death' to realise the problem doesn't reside entirely or even mostly with the prisoners. They know the broader society has rejected them as equal citizens – something that's reinforced every day by how 'the state' (as represented by the prison staff) see and treat them. So, expecting someone to embrace their citizenship while so many others are rejecting them is a pretty tall order and not something I'd expect to see addressed by nicely laid-out buildings and some tinsel on the razor tape.

IMHO Bradley has demonstrated where his head's at with his notion of "the civic qualities of just punishment" - as if punishment is, or should be, a vital ingredient of justice.

Obviously, the concept of *restorative* justice has completely passed him by, along with the rather obvious point that reintegrating someone with the community as a citizen requires not just the person but the community to be on board.

That said, his research does seem to have correctly identified that the way prison visiting by loved ones and community groups is managed is counterproductive to reintegration with society. Better

design of visiting areas might help address that problem, but not in the absence of systemic cultural and procedural reform that deals with the way both prisoners and visitors are treated during the visiting process. Even in pleasant surroundings, abuse is still abuse. Or should we call it 'just punishment'?"

Emailed Response 2

Even if staff and prisoners agree the architecture should give the appearance it deters crime you've got to wonder whether it's justified when we know it doesn't work.

Online Form Response 1

From our experience visiting a family member in prison, we think the design you've proposed looks great in terms of providing space and connection with nature for families to come together in (separate from the jail).

Overall, we think all the designs you've proposed look great in terms of visually representing and practically applying the findings from your research. We definitely feel like these designs would have a positive impact on inmates and not only their experiences but the experiences of all people within the system — staff, families, friends.

Online Form Response 2

Design 1: Public Entry and Visits Buildings: While I prefer the idea of a separate entry for visitors, I would be concerned about it being on a busy road. Visitors could be harassed or embarrassed when entering the centre, particularly by media if they're involved in a high-profile case. Visits are also a stressful time for families with children, so the road could be a risk.

It is also just as important to control how staff enter and leave the centre. Staff should only be able to access the centre through one breach of the perimeter, and their capacity to use the visitor entry should be limited.

Design 2: Amenity for Being Productive: I worry that Faith spaces become overly important to inmates simply because of boredom, and that if they were offered more productive activities it might serve them better in the long run.

Design 3: The Wall - A Symbol of Civic Duty: I think that the "Wall" should never be mesh. It is not a zoo where people can peer in. Also consider other messages that the "Wall" could send to the community. If it resembles the façade of an industrial building, it could promote the idea of a productive space where inmates are working to turn their lives around. Or maybe more artistic, to confer the idea that the inmates are also human?

Design 4: A Way In / A Path Out: I really like the idea of inmates entering and exiting the centre through different portals, to mark the transition.

General Comments: The idea of citizenship implies being an active participant in society, with both rights and responsibilities. The "responsibilities" are certainly understood by inmates, simply by the fact that they are in prison. The "rights" could be explored more fully with the Public Entry and Visits buildings. For example, inmates could be encouraged to vote in elections using the visits space (something not currently allowed).

5.4 DISCUSSION

5.4.1 Tinsel on the Razor Tape

As mentioned throughout this thesis, a primary intention of the study was to examine prison design through existential viewpoints to arrive at a new understanding of custodial design through a lens of citizenship. In doing this, the research employed a constructionist epistemology with a phenomenological perspective. The central premise of the research is that citizenship is commonly held by all participants, regardless of their circumstances in a democratic society (Warren quote in Brettschneider 2011, p. 50). While the feedback from the exhibition primarily responded to the design function/feature/aesthetics of the design-oriented scenarios, a critical exception was the challenge to the research (and researcher's) comprehension of citizenship. This critique was particularly focused on the socio-political power relationships that are implicit or explicit across social demographics and that drive a wedge between society and the 'other' (Bauman 2000; Becker 2018, p. 35; Kronick & Thomas 2008; Scharff-Smith 2015, p. 35).

The exhibition respondents challenged the capacity of architecture to be meaningful in shifting someone's sense of 'citizenship' from being labelled as less desirable to re-joining society anew. They questioned architecture's general capacity to directly influence a person's view of their situation and self. Moreover, they expressed significant doubt that architecture could be intentionally imbued with meaning to such an extent that that meaning was completely understood by those

experiencing it (Nadel & Mears 2018, p. 13). And further still, if that meaning was understood, whether it would cause indelible visceral reaction and change in a person.

The nature of the critique recalls the literature that argues prisoners may not aspire to achieve an idealised notion of being a social citizen when their society has weaponised this very notion against them as a way emphasising the separation between 'us' and "*them*" as the less desirable 'other' (Bauman 2000, p. 206; Turner 2012, p. 329). In a wider theoretical context, the criticism points to labelling theory (Becker 2018; Kronick & Thomas 2008) to explain exclusion and power relations that maintain social stratification through discrimination (Freire & Ramos 1972, p. 31).

'They (prisoners) know the broader society has rejected them as equal citizens' [staff]

'... expecting someone to embrace their citizenship while so many others are rejecting is a pretty tall order and not something I'd expect to see addressed by nicely laid out buildings and some tinsel on the razor tape' [exhibition respondent]

'I think the whole approach is wrong-headed. Yes, you can probably facilitate a sense of citizenship in the community via architecture and urban planning and maybe you could even reduce offending and imprisonment rates that way. But – by the time someone is in prison, the horse has already bolted' [exhibition respondent]

The following sections re-visit the research data in light of the 'lost citizenship' critique. The method employed will be a hybrid crossing back and forth between significant statements and the composite descriptions. It will be referred to collectively as 'data'. The reason for the hybrid approach is that the study shifts from the lived experience of the prison and citizenship to include a recognition of the causal influences on a person's idea of their citizenship prior to being in prison. It is still a discussion about citizenship and is expanded to accommodate the viewpoint of the exhibition respondents. The intention is to develop an additional script (Stephan 2015) and hypothesis as a way to respond to the critique and bring closure to the practice component of the thesis.

Previously, the script and hypothesis were developed into a set of potential design-sketch scenarios. At this late stage of the thesis, the focus is on a 'script' response to the critique as a means of closing off the issues raised. Any sketch scenarios will need to be left for another day, to be developed as the topic of a future design studio with students, an industry research project, or professional practice. The issues raised in the critique are clearly complex and are likely to be a significant influence on theory and social standpoint in my future design practice, which is likely to be guided by the principles of humane prisons and design justice, as discussed

in section 5.4.3 (Baggio et al. 2018, pp. 33-46; 10 Principles in Costanza-Chock 2020, pp. 6-7).

5.4.2 Search for The Horse That's Bolted

'They (prisoners) know the broader society has rejected them as equal citizens' [exhibition respondent]

In reviewing and discussing the data, a particular emphasis will be on 'rejection' and 'equal citizenship'.

Alternative Script – 'De-labelling'

The aim of the 'de-labelling' script is to recognise there are social forces that contribute to the disadvantage and discrimination that may lead to a person being in prison and are almost certainly beyond their influence to change. The term is employed as part of labelling theory (Becker 2018), which acknowledges that labelling is not the act of one person or a cohort to identify a particular 'type', but a complex power manipulation of many social members and entities (including government agencies) to maintain or manipulate status (Foucault 1991). The 'relabelling' script (described below) challenges architecture facilitate the capacity for people in prison (prisoners, programs staff, custodial staff, special visitors, visitors, and management) to engage in social interaction (and roles) that foster understanding, acceptance, and equality, and are beyond those typically experienced in the prison binary of prisoner/officer roles.

Alternative Hypothesis – 'Relabelling'

Returning to the data in this research, there is evidence of citizenship being perceived as rejection and inequality by members of society in the section on significant statements and composite descriptions (sections 3.2 and 3.3). In these, citizenship is referred to as (but not limited to) 'being a criminal', 'institutionalisation', 'dignity' 'what is normal?', 'social connectivity' 'just punishment', 'coping mechanisms', and 'appearance of the prison'. The United Nations calls for prisons to replicate the outside world (Rule 107 Nations 2015, p. 37), but there is a general view throughout the research that this not possible with respect to function, aesthetic, perceived role of the prison, and the less than ideal social circumstances of the prisoners. A replication of the outside world expects the prisoner to engage with it (Turner 2012, p. 329). In the end (as indicated in the interviews and throughout the significant statements), the outside world may not be something to aspire to. The

'haldenisation'¹ of custodial architecture misses the mark in terms of what is desired by those that are marginalised.

'Someone has decided to focus on the prison environment for inmates and I have been asked to comment on the materialistic aspect. I am unable to see the value of this exercise and in fact find it quite amusing. But I still want to make my contribution in the hope that someone might listen. My hope is that some researcher may open his eyes and see how vulnerable the human spirit is.

Location, colour and furniture are no substitute for the need of humans to feel that they belong, to be accepted, to be recognized and possibly even forgiven. I have been placed somewhere I do not want to be. I know I deserve it and the only forgiveness I really seek is from those I am kept away from. With my hand on my heart I can say that the world's most humane prison, decorated by artists and architects crushed me more than I had thought possible. It is only now, here in the old, worn-out, obsolete prison that I begin to feel dignity again. My maxim is: Humanity rather than materialism. Things mean nothing, relationships mean everything' (Halden prisoner 'John K' in Franson et al. 2018, pp. 34-5)

John K's viewpoint of the of the idealised world of Halden has likeness to the film *The Truman Show* (Weir 1988), where the 'ideal world' of the main character is completely constructed and manipulated by actors and production, with a voyeuristic viewing by the rest of society.

Noticing some of the things that John K identifies as being important and which have correlation with the data in this research, there is a basic human need for belonging, acceptance, being recognised, and forgiveness. This research aspires to environments that offer all these things, so that people can exist and account for their lives (relabelling) in a dignified manner.

'We know we've done wrong. That's what puts us here. When in jail the worst thing is to lose your dignity' [prisoner]

Design — Belonging, acceptance, recognition, and forgiveness — Dignity

The design hypothesis for relabelling calls for a specific attitude towards the design of things. The approach calls for design practitioners to ask ourselves (and our collaborators) at every design decision, does this afford a dignified existence?

¹ This is a term of the author that refers to the fascination with the aesthetic of Halden Prison in Norway.

Will your design aid with belonging, acceptance, recognition, and forgiveness? And, what methods will you use to build this knowledge, without bias and with all stakeholders represented? (Costanza-Chock 2020, pp. 6-7) This is discussed in the next chapter, where a proposal for a model for equitable social inclusion in custodial design concludes the practice-led project.

Chapter 6: Design and Practice: Discussions

6.1 INTRODUCTION

Without exception, the world has changed significantly for its people in the last couple of years for many reasons including social, pandemic, and climate related. The impact of change is having a material impact on our lives in so many aspects – whole societies in lockdown. Justice systems and agencies are not immune and change for them is inevitable. The International Corrections and Prisons Association (ICPA) acknowledged this (ICPA 2021), and forewarned the global corrections agencies it is inevitable that prisons, as they have been viewed historically, will be challenged in the near future. This change is being pushed by global social movements that are looking for their own input and say in the social institutions that are there to serve the community.

‘The net to “de-fund police” is being cast broadly now to also include traditional incarceration facilities. At its core, architecture is about improving the human condition and nowhere should this be more apparent than in the design of correctional environments’. (ICPA 2021)

The recent rise of these social movements has coincided with the completion of this thesis. They weren't as apparent at the start in late 2016, but have been a strong influence throughout in shifting the research contributions from a quest for new design knowledge to an expanded focus on developing a practice methodology to facilitate multiple stakeholders in conceptualising new design in future practice. Where previously social concerns towards gender, race, green issues, or abolition causes were considered as being on the periphery of the social discourse, they are now more of a central concern at a local and global scale. Fearing the future, voicing a concern, aligning with a cause, being heard, agitating, advocating, has activated many in society to engage with these causes and to bring them into the social spotlight. As the ICPA (2021) acknowledges the need for change in how prisons are conceived, there is an opportunity from this research to further develop inclusive design methods in custodial design as a contribution to custodial practice.

In this concluding stage of this thesis, the objective now is to reconcile its purpose and articulate what role it has played in advancing custodial design and architectural practice. The goal from the outset was for this research to act as an independent, practice-based vehicle to investigate the socio-political meaning of the prison at the grass roots. Lived experience of custodial environments is rare in custodial architectural research (Fikfak et al. 2015, p. 29). It is hoped that the approach to the construction of knowledge about custodial design established in this research will

be developed in future practice so that the life-experience of those directly impacted by custodial environments is acknowledged and their knowledge becomes integral to strategic design processes in the future.

6.2 CUSTODIAL DESIGN + PRACTICE

6.2.1 Assumptions

Early in the research, the university held a symposium where early degree students volunteered to present their work to their peers and academics. It was about a week after I had completed the interviews and was heading into the transcription process. The experience of interviewing across multiple locations and correctional centres was still fresh, and I had not the time to process all that had happened (this is still ongoing and feels like it always will be to some degree). Some of the themes that emerged during note taking from the interviews suggested that people in prison wanted to be afforded the dignity of doing their time without distraction. They didn't want to be reminded of the goings-on of the outside world or 'superficial' design initiatives that suggested something beyond the prison, or even worse, for them to be thinking of something that was someone else's idea of how they should be responding to the environment. This sentiment applied to both staff and prisoners in their respective roles. At the time of the presentation, there was no concept of how this might manifest in design, and none was offered, but the idea that those inside had viewpoints that were counter to an expectation that the research would produce findings of open green fields or murals of ideal environments was received with some bewilderment by the audience. For those inside, a sense of citizenship while in prison was a matter of accepting your circumstance and being able to move through the time allocated in a safe and purposeful manner, be it an eight-hour shift or an eight-month sentence. The viewpoint of those inside indicated that if time was sensed as being on hold, or if there were distractions that made time feel longer (described as doing "head miles" in the interviews), this was the antithesis of what a custodial environment should afford. This example of what is perceived and what transpires as desired in custodial environments highlights the value of the research design's application of a constructionist, existential, phenomenological methodology. New understandings held by a stakeholder cohort with life experience about their environment are brought into the light, whereas they have previously lain concealed and assumed.

While the research methodology in this thesis employed a mechanism to examine the topic of citizenship and justice phenomenologically without any preconceived viewpoint, it is not suggesting that the exact same approach would be compatible with future penal design research or commercial practice depending on the nature of the topic. The following section outlines a transition from the methods in this thesis to compatible ones of future design research or practice.

6.2.2 Transitions of Perspective: From Research to Practice

This section provides an overview of a transition from the research methodology employed in this study to one that is will be compatible to future practice and provide the overall theoretical approach to the model in the next section. The table outlines the method used in this research and correlates a method that applies to future design practice. It then outlines the assumptions of the transition and the objective of the proposed design practice method (Valters 2015, p. 6).

As guide to reading the table on the following pages, the flow of the table follows Crotty's 'Scaffold' to organise the various aspects of the methodology in the vertical and their transition to a practice methodology in the horizontal.

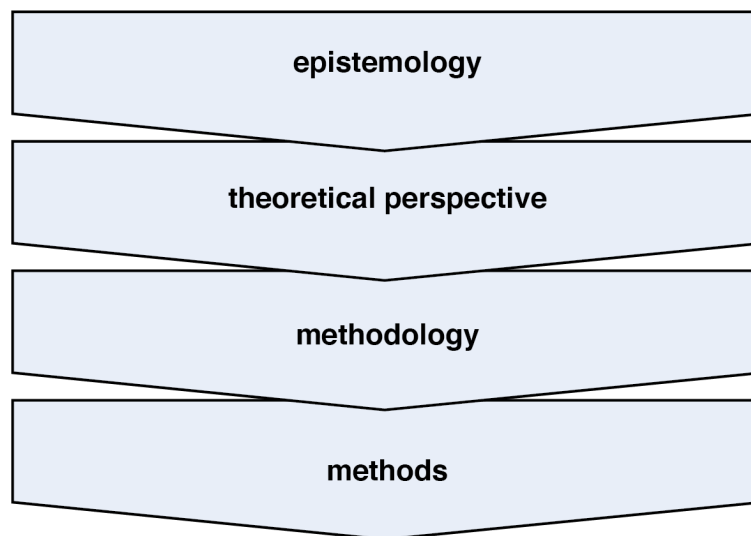


Figure 6-1. Crotty's 'Scaffold' Four Elements of Social Research. (Crotty 1998, p. 4)

Table 6-1. Transition of Perspective: From Research to Practice

Research/Thesis	Design Practice	Assumptions	Objective
Epistemological: Constructionism	Epistemological and ontological: Constructivism	<p>Depending on the nature of a future project, it is possible that a new design would be subject to a level of pre-reflective knowledge of a subject held by participants.</p> <p>It is also possible that questions for design would be based on existing concerns with a social impact for a particular aspect of a prison environment and thus attract a constructivist approach.</p>	<p>The reason in the shift is recognition that there is likely to be a base of knowledge and social context to a design problem. This shifts the nature of the construction of knowledge from working from existing viewpoints of some concern towards new understanding of an existing problem.</p> <p>The objective is to establish common ground before taking on a research design.</p>
Theoretical Perspective: Interpretivist - phenomenology	Theoretical Perspective: Interpretivist - phenomenology	<p>There is no change in this theoretical perspective.</p> <p>The intention and assumption of both prior research and future practice is that information that informs design will always come from a stakeholder cohort and will always be subject to interpretation by thematic analysis.</p>	<p>Stakeholder perspective about a particular phenomenon will be central to future practice.</p> <p>Depending on the nature of future projects, the stakeholder cohort may well be more or less expansive than the original research model. It will depend on the nature of the design problem and the reach of impact.</p>

Research/Thesis	Design Practice	Assumptions	Objective
Methodology: qualitative, phenomenological, and practice visual interpretation	Qualitative:		
	Interviews, significant statements, composite descriptions, scripts	Each project will attract a specific qualitative research design. Scripts are an essential tool for the descriptive portal to conceptualising design-oriented scenarios (as in the original research) but should allow for a greater co-participatory method to include stakeholders. ²	Scripts will be a key mechanism for transitioning from data to design. The activity of scripting will vary depending on the nature of the project. It is key however, to generating new insights that are shared.
	Practice:		
	Design oriented scenarios, exhibition - online concepts - not part of the original thesis.	Design oriented scenarios feature as a means to generate visualisations of the qualitative output of future design research and practice. Exhibition will need to be much more accessible and multi-platformed (than the original research), with 'town-hall' capacity for discussion). – (Continues next page)	The design-oriented scenarios are retained as a mechanism of articulating the collaborative and collective knowledge development. Exhibition remains a form of feedback and validation. (Continues next page)

² See Patton's reference to the Minnesota Extension Service community development project – PROJECT FUTURE (Patton 1990, p. 136).

Research/Thesis	Design Practice	Assumptions	Objective
		Adjusted concepts to be drafted and distributed to stakeholders.	Design concepts that articulate the collective thinking and desired amenity will become a portal for inclusion to strategic planning for a new project. They are not expected to be a literal depiction of a future facility, but a final collective expression of aesthetic and function.

6.2.3 Model of Embedded Social Knowledge to Inform Custodial Design

What if we lived in a society that centred public knowledge rather than allocating astronomical budgets to the management of financial intelligence and vast carceral regimes? (Mattern 2021, pp. 16-7)

The purpose of this section is to present a practice model based on the life-experience methodology employed in this research. It aligns with the call by the International Red Cross for a design process to be 'dynamic, iterative, and inclusive', quoted in Baggio et al. (2018, p. 87). The intention of the 'Embedded Social Knowledge' (ESK) model is to develop a vision for custodial design that responds to strategic issues of a particular social context. It is expected that the information constructed from this model would be part of a project proposal, where the conceptualised design scenarios inform the design team of the array of qualities desired for a range of functions. To arrive at a vision for a project, any number of issues or concerns can be investigated through the model. Numerous models could be run concurrently within the design process and will be subject to a scoping brief from the Strategy stage.

Significant to the organisation of the model are the various stages that evolve and interact with the stakeholders, whose viewpoint is central to the process. While the flow of the model is not a closed loop, it is intended to be part of a larger, closed procurement model, as indicated in the following section.

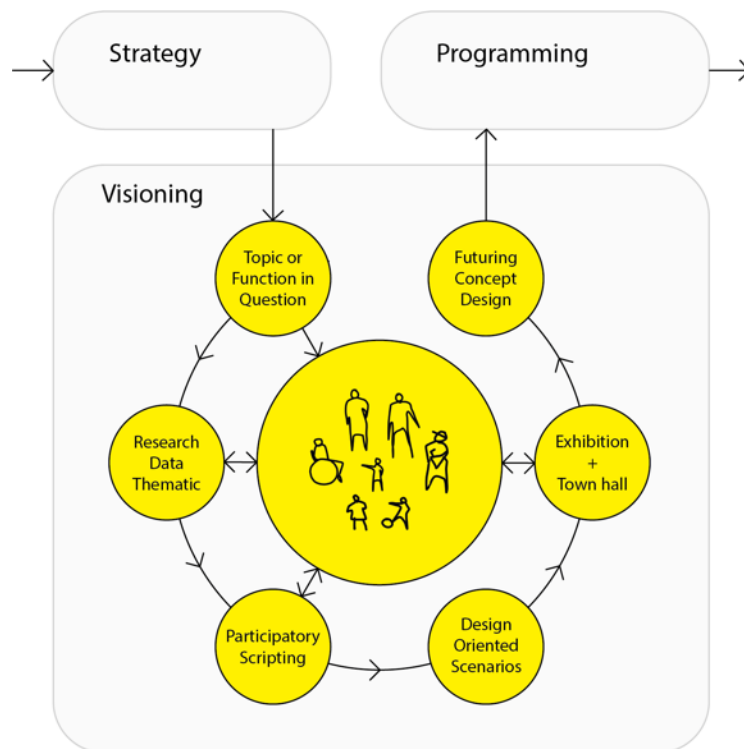


Figure 6-2. Model of embedded social knowledge to inform custodial design

The following stages of the proposed model are outlined

- Topic or function in question – this component is the entry point to the ‘visioning’ design development (Baggio et al. 2018, p. 87). There is no limit to a topic or function or scale.
- Research, Data, Theme — the qualitative research/practice component. Its role as a qualitative investigation is to address the past and establish an anticipation of the future that can be then scripted in the following activity (Patton 1990, p. 137). It is expected any research will have a constructivist epistemological/ontological base for its knowledge construction on the particular topic.
- Participatory scripting. In this part, where issues or concerns are being described as a script, continuous involvement with the participant cohort to the process is important. Ideally, the previous research would be presented by the design facilitator in a workshop environment where participants could have input and form ideas. It is also feasible to incorporate a visual exercise as part of the participatory scripting, to diminish the mystery and impact of the inevitable creative leap by the design team (Cross 2006, pp. 43-4).
- Design scenarios — these are design vignettes that interpret and articulate the collective viewpoint of the participant cohort. They are a mechanism that interprets and visualises the collective concerns for a particular topic and provides a medium for discussion. Their purpose is to evoke images of possibilities to address concerns rather than being prescriptive of a design outcome.
- Exhibition — town hall exhibition. An exhibition is suggested as a form of checking the findings. The manner of exhibition will depend on the nature, scale, and scope of a project. A project may be for a single space, or a whole facility. It is important in this stage to ensure continuous engagement with stakeholder participants and a broader affected audience, if deemed appropriate to the project.
- Finalise design scenarios and write up concepts that address original concerns. The role performs a visual reference for a desired future and strategic goals that can be included in the programming documentation of a new project (Baggio et al. 2018, p. 74) and offer insights to the qualities and functionality of a particular part of the design.

6.2.4 Locating the Contribution Back into Practice

There are infinite procurement models for custodial facilities around the world. They vary depending on many factors, including (but not limited to) the goals for a justice system of a jurisdiction, geographical and economic circumstances, construction capacity, and budget. To situate the ESK model from the previous section, an international procurement model for prisons is utilised to examine how the method may fit with practice. The one utilised is from the International Committee for the Red Cross (Baggio et al. 2018, p. 87) as that model is global and supports their four principles to help governments conceptualise their places of detention – ‘Do no harm’, ‘Maintain a maximum of normality’, ‘Promote health and personal growth’, and ‘Maintain connection with society’. They note these four principles were derived from three sources — International law and standards related to detention, research on how design influences human behaviour and relations, and evidence from decades of visits to places all over the world by ICRC staff, who have witnessed first-hand how detention and the design of prisons affect detainees, their families, staff, and management (Baggio et al. 2018, pp. 35-6). Many of the themes of this research fall within the principles promoted by the ICRC, including designing for diverse populations, human needs, safety, decency/dignity, and integration with society (Baggio et al. 2018) .

The insertion of the Embedded Social Knowledge (ESK) model into the ICRC procurement model is at the point of vision for a proposed prison. The reason for this is that this location is a part of the process that is open for ‘futuring’ prior to the following stages, where the process becomes more defined and leads to construction. The ESK component is indicated as a single thing, when it could be a multiple number of foci or concerns that would attract a number of groups working on specific topics with different stakeholder cohorts. The objective is to realise a ‘vision’ of these aspects so they are incorporated into the broader vision for a new or existing facility.

In another circumstance, a small-scale insertion to an existing facility may be required. This circumstance is like the project that instigated this research, the ILC, and others that were undertaken concurrently over the course of this research project (a prison cell study). The ESK model stands alone and can be adjusted to a smaller working group with less focus on external exhibition, but still retaining an openly accessible process of design and how design decisions are made.

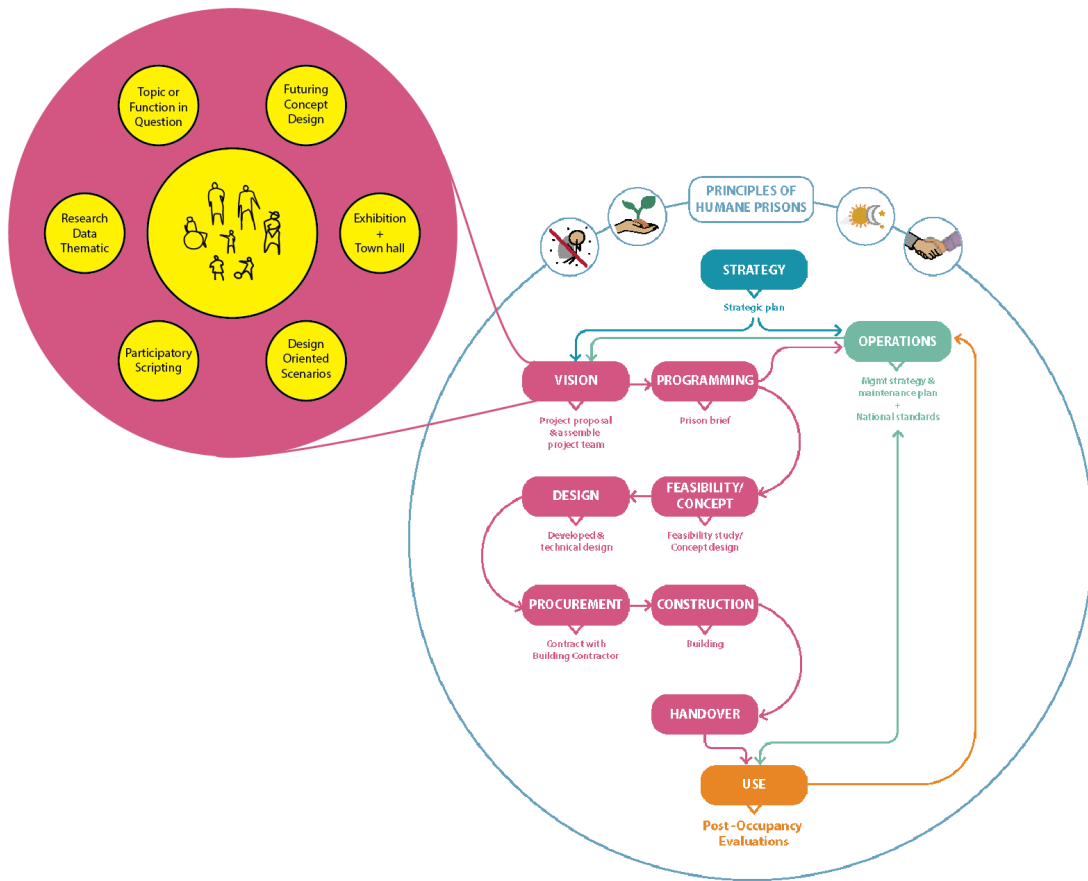


Figure 6-3. Embedded Social Knowledge Model in ICRC Cyclical Design Model

Figure 6-4 above utilises and extends an ESK practice process and contributes to the ICRC procurement model, which has a global application to custodial design. The benefit of the model is that it is topic/function-specific, with a discrete process that can plug into a larger procurement model such as the ICRC model.

6.2.5 Limitations and Opportunities

In this section, we will address some of the limitations and opportunities emerging from this research as a projection to the future. In both categories, the discussion is a mix of personal or professional experience in the custodial design field, with some reflections on poignant times in conducting the research and things found in publications or literature. The following discussion will traverse in a similar fashion to Rubin's (2021, pp. 1-2) rock-climbing anecdote/metaphor for qualitative research, where there is no singular right way to ascend the climb and the route depends on the climber's style. The route here will start at limitations and then move to opportunities (better to finish on a positive note!). There is also a need to limit the discussion to key reference topics, since an unlimited scope would likely render the discussion weak if it is dispersed over a wide field of topics. To this end, the scope of the discussion is bookended by two aspects of this research: the socio-political bearing on custodial environments, and facilitating social change through design.

Brown and Wilkie provide an example of the dilemma custodial research faces if it suggests any sort of reform agenda. They refer to a New South Wales parliament committee report that recommended that the design of a new women's prison be suspended pending a study into a range of specific diversionary measures, followed by a monitoring of cost and effectiveness of those measures in comparison to the cost of building a new prison (Brown & Wilkie 2002, p. xxi). This report was produced by a committee of politicians from all the political parties. It argued for a pause to the procurement process of a new prison to undertake a cost benefit analysis between the capital cost of a new facility and the use of alternative diversionary methods. Brown and Wilkie note; 'even where the arguments are spelt out clearly in a rational, democratic and well researched way, they will not necessarily find favour'. Despite the fact that the report was 'carefully and cogently argued', it was immediately repudiated by both the government and opposition party in a bipartisan response, which demonstrates the 'very real political limits' to claims for non-ideological, evidence-led reform (ibid). They went for the costly prison even though they were presented evidence of an alternative that was more effective, less punitive, and would have significantly less collateral impact on society.

The seemingly illogical blocking of an initiative that offered significant social benefit, as in the Brown and Wilkie anecdote, is likely to be familiar to many that have associations with justice systems and governments (Consoli 2012). It is possible that this research will be viewed similarly. Having spent some time in prisons on research projects, even for myself as the outsider, the pervasive environmental qualities across the penal estate feels so inevitable that there is no alternative. As Garland observes:

Equally, it may simply be that once it was actually built, the massive infrastructure of imprisonment represents an investment (in terms of buildings, administrative structures, and professional careers) which is too costly to give up but is sufficiently flexible to adapt itself to the various penal policies, which have come into vogue. The prison may thus be retained for all sorts of reasons – punitiveness, economy, or a plain lack of any functional alternative – which have little to do with any latent success as effective control or political strategy. (Garland 1990, p. 166)

At this point, I may have overstated the limitations, or at least, the significance of the forces that are opposed to what this thesis proposes. This practice-led thesis and its ESK methodology does not wish to confront nor contribute to the apparent inevitability of the prison into the foreseeable future (Maurer in Baggio et al. 2018, p. 6). Greater global forces beyond this study are emerging to push the power structures of justice systems (ICPA 2021) to be more socially accountable for their social facilities. The opportunity for this research, in its pursuit for social inclusiveness

through its perspective and methods is to be able to engage at the grass roots and to build representative knowledge from that perspective (Haraway 1988, p. 583). In between the traditional perspective of penal practice and the outlook that contemporary society is grappling with in current times, lies the opportunity for this research in how it recognises the existing whilst facilitating social inclusiveness in the development of a future vision.

Through the exhibition and others reading of this research specific aspects of prisons have been highlighted for future research and publication. The following aspects of prison design have potential for further practice-based research, article publications, or the focus of a student design studio:

- Visitor seat design
- The meaning of the 'wall' and 'doing time' – design considerations
- Sharing Prison Research – equitable methods of sharing research outcomes with prison stakeholders
- 'Better Out' – Articulating tangible aims of prisons to stakeholders

Similar to Rubin's climber, who plots the route up a rock face, the journey of opportunity out of this research is expected to be a series of points, decisions, vector paths, and movement towards the summit, as opposed to taking on the custodial system in a single leap. The opportunity into the future will be to work within the existing justice and custodial system to identify the incremental points as things that can change within existing paradigms of safety, efficiency, and security.

The opportunity of widest impact for the ESK model is its potential to play a role of collective life experience in the 'Vision' component of the ICRC participatory design development model for humane prisons (Baggio et al. 2018, p. 87). The widest impact can be realised, as the ICRC is an independent and neutral organization with a global reach (ICRC 2021).

The opportunity of greatest value (from my viewpoint) is the ESK model's potential to be inclusive, participatory, and equitable. It facilitates social change narratives into prison architecture. Its method allows for all existential viewpoints to be relevant and valued and for them to be articulated through architectural means with a mechanism of validation.

The opportunity for the architectural profession (and this is also a personal interest) is to re-imagine their role from being the service provider to the institutional design brief, to becoming a facilitator of collective visions that have a critical input to the formation of the brief. As this role develops, it is feasible that the office of the designer will be expanded to include other occupations such as social geographers, anthropologists, environmental psychologists, therapists, change management, and facilitators.

The opportunity for my own practice lies in the path to design justice and developing further practice methods to achieve this in the social setting (Baggio et al. 2018, p. 33; Costanza-Chock 2020, pp. 6-7).

Chapter 7: Closure and Onwards to Practice

7.1 CLOSURE

This chapter concludes the Citizen Informed Custodial Design: An Exploration through Design and Practice practice-led research study. In closing the study, the chapter focusses on, and expands on the research contributions to custodial design and practice.

7.2 CONTRIBUTIONS

I have been in the design profession for approximately 40 years. My career has been evenly split over commercial and government projects for the first 30 years. It is only when joining Designing Out Crime and being involved with custodial design in the last 10 years that I began to experience prison environments. Over time it became apparent to me that custodial architecture was the net output of a contested design process between agencies of the state, powerful construction contractors, and an array of technical consultants, and architects (Consoli 2012). This contest was conducted out of view from the society that it ultimately served. It is unsurprising then that the 'warehouse', with its function to conceal, is the architectural aesthetic of modern liberal democratic society's approach to dealing with crime through a 'logic of exclusion and fortification' (Bauman 2000, p. 205).

The personal and professional concern that instigated this research project was initially for the capacity for custodial environments to maintain a sense of social connection for those inside the prison walls. This concern informed the research questions and provided the backdrop to the qualitative enquiry. Several interactions with research participants over the study developed another concern for the 'visioning' or commissioning of a prison (Baggio et al. 2018, pp. 86-7). Questions of why the 'warehouse' was a thing, and who says it is so set the realisation that those most impacted by the prison environment had no say in its design. This shifted the research to a constructionist epistemological framing and, ultimately, the production of the ESK model. The model promotes the use of lived experience as a basis for the construction of knowledge. Rather than design from the singular vision of the state, the model prioritises the knowledge of those that know the impact of an architectural design decision through their lived experience. The model's epistemological perspective is the designer 'knows of nothing' of the experience of the prison and therefore knowledge that contributes to design is constructed through phenomenological enquiry and visual interpretations that can be critiqued. The model of knowing nothing stands in contrast the conventional forms of knowledge about prison of 'knowing of everything' as embodied in the client brief to which the architect designs to (Scharff-Smith 2015, p. 38).

The benefit of the model is it brings to light the voices of the impacted and centres them in the production of design knowledge prior to the formalisation of the design brief. The model's contribution to custodial design practice critically redefines the role of the architect from within the 'black box' (Banham & Banham 1996, p. 299) of conventional custodial design practice to a facilitator for the visioning of future worlds (Foqué 2010, p. 44) that are directly informed by those with concerns for them.

The following sections discuss the research contributions to design practice in terms of 'design' and the ESK model in its components. The purpose of the following discussion is not to reiterate the 'findings' of the research as "research contribution", but to expand on aspects of design and the model through a future practice lens. The discussions have both a rear and forward perspective with the purpose of articulating how things could be approached in the future based on how they were experienced in the research (Valters 2015, p. 5) as a contribution for future practice.

7.2.1 Design

Prioritising Lived Experience over Populist Perspective

Four design-oriented scenarios were developed by the research to evoke an existential understanding of how prisons could be if they were to facilitate a sense of 'citizenship'. Each of these scenarios have a common functional factor of public interaction they consider 'citizenship' and social connection. Design oriented scenarios for the interior (yards, wings, cells, common spaces, circulation corridors, industries) fell beyond the scope of the research. The reason for this is their 'content' or the vision of them was beyond the view of the public. The lack of direct knowledge of the prison interior at the exhibition would be open to non-lived experience and largely, subjective opinion. Including design scenarios for non-public interfacing parts of the prison would likely attract critique based on a pervasive punitive bias against prisoners from the public (7_News 2021; Brown & Wilkie 2002, p. xx) that have no knowledge of the interior environment of the prison. Public viewpoints on fully enclosed parts of the prison would ultimately skew the outcome towards a populist (Scharff-Smith 2015, p. 38) punitive interpretation of citizenship proffered by a cohort without lived experience. This approach of limiting the outputs to the public interface elements of design may seem counterintuitive to an open sharing which should be able to accept such input. Particularly when the research is about citizenship and is applicable to all, but there is sufficient evidence that governments react negatively to public and media opinion. This is part of the reason for limited reform in prison and the prevailing aesthetic of the modern prison (Bauman 2000; Brown & Wilkie 2002, p. xx). The research receiving populist punitive perspective of the prison's interior environment would only replicate the over accounting for the views of the media and public who consistently express the desire for the punitive

conditions/treatment over any reform that would contribute to the returning functioning citizens to society (Brown & Wilkie 2002, p. xx).

Generating Different Scripts from the Base Data

The scripts and design scenarios generated by this study are developed in the context of the citizenship topic and questions. As outlined throughout the research, the significant statements and composite descriptions are the phenomenological treatment of the interview data to ultimately generate the 'scripts' and corresponding design-oriented scenarios. The content of the interview data was expansive covering concerns for the immediate environment, and also for future generations. A significant proportion of the data relates to the direct experience of the prison interior and for reasons outlined above, did not generate design scenarios for public exhibition. It is feasible that another study could be conducted with an alternative selective exhibition within the prison on spaces specifically beyond the public eye. Reviewing the composite descriptions in Chapter 3, themes relating to the interior of the prison that articulate the aesthetic and functional of low distraction, focus (the presence of the wall), purposefulness, just punishment, and dignity could be explored. It is feasible that an exploration into the interior aesthetics and functionality of "dignity" in prison based on the lived-experience data from this research would generate new design scenarios in a future study.

Revisiting the data with alternative research questions would also offer the opportunity to have an open exchange about what prison architecture should be if it was to serve particular criteria. Re-applying the data through the ESK model with other research questions could provide a reconciliation between the public perceived need for the punitive (and a corresponding transactional application of the Mandela Rules) versus the existential need for doing time with purpose and dignity. At present, the gap between these two viewpoints manifests in the concrete, steel and glass that is pervasive in the custodial environments (Wener 2012, p. 7). It may even transpire that there is not such a great divide between the design language of a "punitive transactional Mandela" design and one informed by existential phenomenological perspectives of dignity and purpose. Before this study, not having the viewpoints of those inside meant that the assumptions of architects manifest in dire application of materials (Lulham et al. 2016; Wener 2012, p. 7) that in fact, could be something otherwise and significantly, not blindly perpetuating punishment. An exploration through design scenarios (and subsequent validation through an alternative sharing strategy) would assure architects the knowledge to go forward with confidence in their designs based on existential need rather than an assumed one – particularly in terms of function and materials. Until then, the needle points to the assumed 'penal populist' punitive and technical end of the scale of design production without regard for the existential needs of the citizen making good (Scharff-Smith 2015, p. 38).

7.2.2 Practice

The employment of a constructionist epistemology and phenomenological theoretical perspective in this research could be viewed in penal practice as having the objective to disrupt a system that has been in place for hundreds of years (Foucault 1979; Johnston 1973). Haraway (1988, p. 584) argues that such a perspective, 'is hostile to various forms of relativism as to the most explicitly totalizing versions to claim scientific authority'. Durkheim's version of a justice system's 'claim to scientific authority' is the 'state conceived as a secular priesthood protecting sacred values and keeping faith' (Garland 1990, p. 30). The broader problem as Garland (1990, p. 166) argues is the "prison" is a massive infrastructure that represents an investment (in terms of buildings, administrative structures, and professional careers) which is too costly to give up but is sufficiently flexible to adapt itself to the various penal policies, which have come into vogue'. He argues that the prison is retained for all sorts of reasons that have little to do with any latent success as effective control or political strategy. Foucault puts it more directly, 'One cannot "see" how to replace it [the prison]. It is the detestable solution which one seems unable to do without' (Foucault 1979, p. 232). This locates the dilemma for architecture in reconciling its mandate to design for individual, societal and environmental wellbeing and the custodial environments that are being produced by the profession that, as the respondents in the research claim; 'does not work' (exhibition respondent 2020). The recognition that prison is failing and claims that they exist for the common good is being challenged from an array of standpoints and an increasing awareness that change is inevitable (ADPSR 2020; ICPA 2021; Moran, Jewkes & Lorne 2019).

Schön (1992, p. 39), in discussing problems of the "professions" articulates the dilemma that custodial architects have experienced in reconciling their part in the construction of the prison estate and its social impact (Consoli 2012), 'the professions have suffered a crisis of legitimacy rooted in both their perceived failure to live up to their own norms and in their perceived incapacity to help society solve its problems'. Schön then argues, 'Increasingly we have become aware of the importance to actual practice of phenomena – complexity, uncertainty, instability, uniqueness, and value conflict – which do not fit the model of technical rationality' (ibid). Architecture is at its best when complexity, uncertainty, instability, uniqueness, and value are acknowledged as being concerns and the synthesis of these human and environmental needs into design that assures, delights, and provides comfort. The issue of the 'totalizing version' of the prison that architects are requested to design to versus the capacity to see from the standpoint of the people that will experience their design is at the heart of the dilemma for the custodial architect. Of course, prisons are complex and very expensive to build and there are penal practices and management systems in place that will remain and determine much of the functional brief of a new designs into the future. Neither of these

arguments dispel the unease of the architect in acknowledging that they are designing to a justice system's version of the 'prisoner and staff member' whilst also being cognisant that there will be thousands of people who will be directly impacted by their decisions and of whom they will never meet or be aware of the impact of the prison on them, their families, and their part of society (Haraway 1988, p. 585). Many reconcile their practice through the democratic 'common good' narrative of the state client (Moran, Jewkes & Lorne 2019, p. 71), but for me as a design practitioner and citizen, it is an unsustainable position that looks increasingly less viable into the future (ICPA 2021).

Moran, Jewkes & Lorne (2019, p. 75) in *discussing architectural ethics and prison design* argue, 'architects will need early involvement in a building project to creatively engage with and query a client's brief rather than adopting a narrower role in relation to predetermined plans.' The ESK model in this research responds directly to this need for early intervention and the model's methodology is the contribution to custodial design practice. The model situates the architect as a design facilitator of visioning of existential concerns prior to the brief establishment and its technical application. The model also retains the status of the client as primary shareholder in terms of commissioning, funding and managing a new project as opposed to any suggested elevation of the architect beyond their role: 'the architects to include the client as part of the commissioning' (ibid).

The following outlines and discusses the contribution components of the ESK model to custodial design practice.

Practicing Phenomenology

'So, phenomenology, not unlike poetry, is a poetizing project; it tries an incantative, evocative speaking, a primal telling, wherein we aim to involve the voice in an original singing of the world'.((Merleau-Ponty, 1973) in van Manen 1990, p. 13)

'Put simply and directly, phenomenological enquiry focuses on the question: "What is the structure and essence of experience of this phenomenon for these people?" (Patton 1990, p. 69)

Patton (1990, p. 69) describes phenomenological practice as; 'how we put together the phenomena we experience in such a way as to make sense of the world, and in so doing, develop a world view.' The phenomenological perspective is at the heart of the ESK model and is a critical point of divergence that signifies the difference between conventional methods of custodial design procurement that relies on the 'world view' of the state and this research with its 'world view' generated through lived experience of the phenomena (prison, citizenship, and justice).

Application of the ESK method in the future will retain the phenomenological perspective as its 'grand theory' of enquiry. However, whilst it served this research as a theoretical perspective (along with Durkheim's three stakeholders in punishment concept) to contest custodial design practice conventions, future applications will require a deeper contextual reading of 'phenomenology'. This will depend on the nature of the design questions under investigation (for instance: 'dignity') and a deep understanding of the respective stakeholder cohorts (Costanza-Chock 2020, p. 78). The need for a specific reading and theoretical perspective was highlighted when the notion of 'citizenship' was contested by the exhibition respondents in this research. Their claim was that 'citizenship' was broken well before any person arrived in prison and that it was unlikely that this person would aspire to be a member of a society that had previously rejected him. They also pointed out that it was a societal fault that this occurred, rather than the blame be placed on the individual and that individual bearing the entire responsibility for their rehabilitation to an acceptable standard. This argument challenged the 'grand theory' and application of Durkheim's 'controlled', 'controller', and 'onlookers' (Garland 1990, p. 32).

Haraway (1988, p. 583) argues for a feminist perspective to understand how 'visual systems work, technically, socially, visually, and physically'. Her perspective suggests an approach for future lived experience phenomenological practice that accommodates many interconnected pictures of the world into an 'elaborate specificity'. It accounts for the diversity of participants in a phenomenological study (as experienced in this research) without reference to the generic Durkheim social classification. It affords the agency of 'seeing from the peripheries and the depths' that 'privileges contestation, deconstruction, passionate construction, webbed connections, and hope for transformation of systems of knowledge and ways of seeing' (Haraway 1988, p. 585). This perspective will afford the practitioner an openness to 'complexity, uncertainty, instability, uniqueness, and value conflict' which as Schön argues, does not 'fit the model of technical rationality' (Schön 1992, p. 39) but through the ESK model captures what is important into the design process.

Using Scripts to Hear the Voices from Within

'Can we devise another powerful descriptive tool that deals this time with matters of concern and whose import then will no longer be to debunk but to protect and to care...?'. (Latour 2004, p. 232)

The role of scripts in the ESK model is the pivotal point between the qualitative and practice-based components. They have the dual role of describing collective concerns, and in their naming, provide an energy (powerful descriptive tool) to visualise concerns as design scenarios that are then shared, critiqued and adapted, or, a 'hypothesis in action' (Foqué 2010, p. 45). They are the point in which the

researcher/designer names the themes for design as a '*Script*'. Once named, they are then further articulated through words and design hypotheses.

Scripts contribute to design practice beyond their functional role of being the translating medium between research data and a designer's visualisation. Their significance is their capacity to keep the voice stakeholders present and at the centre of the design process. Those that have participated should be able to connect with a script and subsequently, retain that connection as the scripts become design scenarios.

The development of the 'script' (or scripting) will be an ongoing focus for future practice within the ESK model. They are critical as a data-to-design mechanism for articulating collective social concerns and for co-designer/stakeholders to be able to retain vision of their input to the design process (Freire & Ramos 1972, pp. 83-4).

On reflection, scripting concerns have emerged to be a critical tipping point between data and design. Whilst a phenomenological perspective provides some cover of legitimacy for the designer to author the scripts, their significance for informing design and representing the participants will benefit from a strategy for a more inclusive co-authoring of scripts.

Visualising To Evoke

'Visualising matters of concern is a pivotal design task for the future'
(referring to Latour Stephan 2015, p. 202)

The 'black box' of prison design that produces the 'white boxes' of the "Amazon warehouse" has been discussed previously in this thesis to evoke the hidden role of architecture in the prison design procurement world (Banham & Banham 1996, p. 299; Jewkes, Slee & Moran 2017, p. 301). In Australia, images of proposed or recently completed designs that are produced for public consumption are limited. They are often from the helicopter or aerial drone angle of a whole facility (Chris Vedelago 2019; MacKenzie 2020). Apart from a forthcoming PhD thesis on the external aesthetics of the UK prisons (Slee 2021), there is little literature on the prison environment meaning and aesthetics (Fikfak et al. 2015, p. 29; Nadel & Mears 2018, p. 13). The purpose of the drone's eye view can be assumed to have the purpose of assuring the public that they are getting their 'money's worth' as the whole of the facility is presented as impressive in its size and setting, yet unreadable in terms of what it might be like to be at ground level. You don't want the public too close (Brown & Wilkie 2002, p. xx).

The employment and contribution of the design-oriented visualisations in this thesis, and the ESK methodology to design practice, is it offers a visualisation of concerns from the phenomenological perspective of lived-experience rather than the finished product of an opaque design procurement process. They are a mechanism

to evoke new thinking and promote discussion. They are not to be considered 'true' or 'false' and as such, several design scenarios/hypothesis can exist next to each other (Foqué 2010, p. 45).

The key contribution is their 'visualisation' function in a collaborative model of procurement. They act as a design hypothesis that respond to the collective that are not prescriptive of design, but an expression of the essence of the general will for the common good. Their significance is in their visualising of matters of concern of those that would not otherwise be visible in a conventional design process.

Sharing

Sharing with the original interview participants in workshops or similar in the spirit of co-design collaboration was intended at the outset of this study. As it transpired, this would never have been possible as access to prison is limited (Piché, Gaucher & Walby 2014, p. 449), and it was evident during the interviews that some of the interview participants were preparing to leave the system or be moved to another prison. The limitations of moving in and out of prisons also necessitated an adjustment in the overall methodology to the phenomenological perspective with scripts as the portal to design-oriented scenarios as the thing to be shared and receive feedback.

With the limitations outlined above, and the intention to remain being open and transparent in the practice research, the idea to exhibit the design-oriented scenarios on the web was established. The concept was the information would be available for anyone (except for those in prison) to access and view the design scenarios. There was a feedback page that people could provide comments anonymously. CSNSW was informed of the intention to publish online, and they had an opportunity to view the site and make comment before it went live. For the purposes of future practice, this following is the experience of employing a web page method for sharing and communicating concepts.

The internet is ingrained in our day to day life, so much so that it feels like it is a natural place to share and communicate between each other and broader society. This sense of ease and openness of communicating was the reason for the natural tendency of mine to decide on exhibiting the study findings on a platform that anyone can access and would be free to make comment. In truth, I was expecting some random negative feedback from the general public. I was bracing for the ubiquitous claims of 'LUXURY!' or 'too good for them!' (7_News 2021; Edmund 2019) that are often found in comment sections of anything to do with prisons or prisoners in the media. There was none of that. As it transpires, just because something is on the web and it is open for viewing, it doesn't mean that people are going to engage with it – even if prompted through direct emails and social media. Whilst the website management data showed that the site was being visited and that all the pages were being viewed, it appeared that once visited, people then moved on and few felt the

need to make comment on the feedback page. On the other hand, the responses that were offered were informative and in one case, offered a critical view that extended the study to develop another script of the 'lost citizen'. Other responses were made in person or email, but these are not the focus of this section which is to make clear that I am cognisant of an aspect of weakness in the online sharing of the qualitative study findings of design concepts of the prison and citizenship.

If there was an opportunity to go back and change how this study shared its findings, it will be to develop an equitable multi medium method for sharing rather than assuming a web-based exhibition would have a wide, accessible reach and generate high levels of interaction that includes prisoners and staff within prison. This would include options for participants to receive hard-copy versions of anything that was digital and hosted on the web, and the means to return their feedback if they wanted. There are obvious ethical barriers to negotiate in the detail of how this would work but developing a method for the equitable sharing of designs with co-contributors needs to be a priority in future design and research practice.

7.3 ONWARDS TO PRACTICE

I am very fortunate to have a role as a research associate with Designing Out Crime (DOC) at the University of Technology Sydney. I believe that this study would have been impossible without being associated with this group and benefiting from the standing and respect for DOC within the justice community in New South Wales, across Australia, and globally. I am also humbled have the good fortune to conduct research within prisons both in this study and on other parallel projects undertaken over the life of the PhD. Corrective Services NSW were generous in allowing this work to proceed and for my voice, as a practitioner, to join with those inside to bring to light new understanding of custodial architecture. CSNSW were always aware of the intentions of the research and did not seek to limit the outputs.

I was fortunate to have the opportunity to spend time with the staff and prisoners across three prisons. Everyone I met, even if they weren't totally clear at the outset as to why a researcher was wanting to discuss citizenship and architecture with them, was generous with their time and did not make me feel like I was a burden or distraction to their day (though I expect I was). Back on the outside, were a number of external participants that also generously contributed their time in the interviews. All are either experts in their field or have particular knowledge about the prison and their contributions are equally valuable to the research outputs.

In acknowledging those that have supported this study is to acknowledge their unique contribution to developing architectural practice that has many contributors. This was not a journey of the 'genius' designer that reveals their design to an audience, rather it was a collaboration of the outside, of the inside, with people who held different levels of power, and those that are without agency. It was a journey with people with deep expertise in their professional field and those with deep trauma

from past lives. The constructionist practice methodology with a phenomenological perspective has a central intention to bring all voices from the periphery to the centre regardless of 'authority or status' (Farrelly 2021; Faulkner 2003, p. 288). Its development and application will continue into the future.

This ends a chapter in my career. It wasn't one that was on the radar prior to working with Designing Out Crime and it only happened because of my own lived experience as an architect and a citizen on research projects within prisons. I am energised by my PhD journey and satisfied with the contribution to my profession by offering an alternative design practice methodology that facilitates viewpoints from 'the periphery and the depths' (Haraway 1988, pp. 583-4).

Onwards

Bibliography

- 7_News 2021, 'NSW prisoners handed tablets and technology in world-leading \$8 million trial', Sydney.
- "John K" 2018, *Prison, Architecture and Humans*, Cappelen Damm Akademisk / NOASP, Norway.
- ADPSR 2020, *ADPSR Home Page*, viewed August 2020, <<http://www.adpsr.org/>>.
- Allen, A. 1977, 'Prison Design and The Architect', *Unknown*. Note that indicates it is re-printed from the *Canadian Architect* (with consent).
- Alsop, W., Thornton, T. & Feix, J. 2006, *The Creative Prison*, Rideout.
- Anheier, H.K. 2018, *How to Measure Civil Society*, London School of Economics, viewed 22 March 2018, <<http://fathom.lse.ac.uk/features/122552/>>.
- Baggio, A., Ballon, V., Chesla, E., Deman, C., Farbstein, J., Giesen, V., Goble, R., Marambio Avaria, A.E., McBride, L., Miller, R., Murphy, M., Olabegoya, R., Paurus, M., Preya de Alba, A., Sen, S., Snell, S., Team, D.O.C. & Wener, R. 2018, *Towards Humane Prisons. A principled and participatory approach to prison planning and design*, International Committee of the Red Cross, Switzerland.
- Baillie, A. 2019, *Prisons are failing. It's time to find an alternative*, World Economic Forum, viewed 21 January 2019, <<https://www.weforum.org/agenda/2019/01/prisons-are-failing-time-for-alternative-sparkinside/>>.
- Bajkowski, J. 2016, *Prisons become a new \$3.8bn building boom*, Government News, viewed 02 Oct 2017, <<https://governmentnews.com.au/2016/06/forget-luxury-apartments-prisons-the-new-building-boom-in-nsw/>>.
- Banham, R. & Banham, M. 1996, *A critic writes : essays by Reyner Banham*, University of California Press, Berkeley.
- Bauman, Z. 2000, 'SOCIAL ISSUES OF LAW AND ORDER', *British journal of criminology*, vol. 40, no. 2, pp. 205-21.
- Becker, H.S. 2018, *Outsiders : studies in the sociology of deviance*, Free Press trade paperback edition. edn, Free Press, an imprint of Simon & Schuster, Inc., New York.
- Beyerns, K., Kennes, P., Snacken, S. & Tournel, H. 2015, 'The Craft of Doing Qualitative Research in Prisons', *Crime and Justice Journal*, vol. 4, no. 1, pp. 66-78.
- Bolitho, J. 2015, 'Putting justice needs first: a case study of best practice in restorative justice', *Restorative justice (Hart Publishing (Oxford, England))*, vol. 3, no. 2, pp. 256-81.
- Bosniak, L. 2000, 'Citizenship Denationalized', *Indiana Journal of Global Legal Studies*, no. 7.
- Brettschneider, C.L. 2011, 'Rights within the Social Contract: Rousseau on Punishment', *Law as Punishment/ Law as Regulation*, Stanford University Press.
- Brinkmann, S. & Steiner, K. 2018, 'Epistemological issues of interviewing', *Doing Interviews*, Second edn, SAGE Publications Ltd, 55 City Road, London, pp. 13-26, <<https://methods.sagepub.com/book/doing-interviews-2e>>.
- Brown, D., Hogg, R., Finnane, M., Pratt, J. & Eriksson, A. 2013, 'Review Essay: John Pratt and Anna Eriksson (2013) 'Contrasts in Punishment: An Explanation of Anglophone Excess and Nordic Exceptionalism'', *International journal for crime, justice and social democracy*, vol. 2, no. 3, pp. 120-34.
- Brown, D. & Wilkie, M. 2002, *Prisoners as citizens : human rights in Australian prisons*, Federation Press, Annandale, N.S.W.
- Brown, M. & Carrabine, E. 2017, *Routledge international handbook of visual criminology*, 1 Edition. edn, Routledge, New York.
- Buckmaster, L. & Thomas, M. 2009, *Social inclusion and social citizenship—towards a truly inclusive society*, vol. 10, Parliamentary Library, Canberra.
- Candy, L. 2006, *Practice Based Research: A Guide*, Sydney, CCS Report:2006-V1.0 November.

- Chow, R. 2010, 'What Should be Done with the Different Versions of Research-Through-Design?', transcript Verlag, Bielefeld, pp. 145-58.
- Chris Vedelago, R.M. 2019, '*Stack and rack*': Victoria's newest prison already full and set to expand again, @theage, <<https://www.theage.com.au/national/victoria/stack-and-rack-victoria-s-newest-prison-already-full-and-set-to-expand-again-20190706-p524qr.html>>.
- Consoli, G. 2012, 'The architect's dilemma: A self reflection in understanding prison design and construction in private prison projects', *Australasian Journal of Construction Economics and Building*, vol. 6, no. 2, p. 1.
- Costanza-Chock, S. 2020, *Design justice : community-led practices to build the worlds we need*, The MIT Press, Cambridge.
- Coyle, A. & Fair, H. 2018, *A Human Rights Approach to Prison Management*. , Institute for Criminal Policy Research.
- Creswell, J.W. & Poth, C.N. 2016, *Qualitative inquiry & research design : choosing among five approaches*, Fourth edition. edn.
- Crewe, B. 2011, 'Depth, weight, tightness: Revisiting the pains of imprisonment', *Punishment & Society*, vol. 13, no. 5, pp. 509-29.
- Crook, F. 2017a, *The Howard League | Building massive jails in remote locations is a recipe for disaster*, Howard League for Penal Reform, viewed 03 Sept 2017, <<http://howardleague.org/blog/building-massive-jails-in-remote-locations-is-a-recipe-for-disaster/>>.
- Crook, F. 2017b, *The Howard League | Building massive jails in remote locations is a recipe for disaster*, Howard League for Penal Reform, viewed 13 Sept 2021, <<http://howardleague.org/blog/building-massive-jails-in-remote-locations-is-a-recipe-for-disaster/>>.
- Cross, N. 2006, *Designerly Ways of Knowing*, 1st ed. 2006. edn, Springer London, London.
- Crotty, M. 1998, *The foundations of social research : meaning and perspective in the research process*, Sage Publications, London ;.
- CSNSW 2021, *Reducing Offending. Targets*, viewed 08/09 2021, <<https://correctiveservices.dcj.nsw.gov.au/csnsw-home/reducing-re-offending/targets.html>>.
- Davis, A.Y. 2003, *Are Prisons Obsolete*, Seven Stories Press, New York.
- Delaney, R., Sabrammanian, R., Shames, A. & Turner, N. 2018, *Reimagining Prison*, Vera Institute of Justice, New York. USA.
- Dorst, C.H., Kaldor, L., Klippan, L. & Watson, R. 2016, *Designing for the Common Good*.
- Dostoyevski, F. 1911, *THE HOUSE OF THE DEAD*.
- Dreyfus QC MP, M. 2008, *Reforming our Constitution: A roundtable discussion*, Australian Government, ACT.
- Durkheim, E. 1964, *The rules of sociological method*, 8th ed / edn, Free Press, New York.
- Edmund, D. 2019, *This Luxury Prison In Austria Is Cushy Enough To Get Locked Up In*, @sliptalking, viewed 12 November 2019, <<https://www.buzznick.com/luxurious-jail/>>.
- Fairweather, L. & McConville, S. 2000, *Prison architecture: Policy, design and experience*, Architectural Press, Oxford.
- Farrelly, E. 2021, *The architecture of listening: how First Nations people are helping shape glorious buildings*, The Sydney Morning Herald, Sydney, viewed 11/09 2021, <<https://www.smh.com.au/national/the-architecture-of-listening-how-first-nations-people-are-helping-to-shape-glorious-buildings-20210910-p58ggg.html>>.
- Faulkner, D. 2003, 'Taking Citizenship Seriously: Social Capital and Criminal Justice in a Changing World', *Criminology & Criminal Justice*, vol. 3, no. 3.
- Fikfak, A., Kosanović, S., Crnić, M. & Perović, V.J. 2015, 'The contemporary model of prison architecture: Spatial response to the re-socialization programme', *Spatium*, vol. 34, pp. 27-34.
- Foqué, R. 2010, *Building Knowledge in Architecture*, University Press Antwerp, Brussels.
- Foqué, R. 2010, *Building knowledge in architecture*, University Press Antwerp, Brussels, [Belgium].

- Foucault, M. 1979, *Discipline and punish : the birth of the prison*, Penguin, Harmondsworth.
- Foucault, M. 1991, *Discipline and punish: The birth of the prison*, Penguin Books, London.
- Franson, E., Giofrè, F., Johnsen, B., John K, Porro, L., Trusiani, E., D'Onofrio, R., Fagnoni, P.M., James, F., Brottviet, G., Rokkan, T., Hammerlin, Y., Fridhov, I.m., Grøning, L., Terranova, F., Giani, L. & Catucci, S. 2018, *Prison, Architecture and Humans*, Cappelen Damm Akademisk / NOASP, Norway.
- Fransson, E., Giofrè, F., Johnsen, B., John K, Porro, L., Trusiani, E., D'Onofrio, R., Fagnoni, P.M., James, F., Brottviet, G., Rokkan, T., Hammerlin, Y., Fridhov, I.m., Grøning, L., Terranova, F., Giani, L. & Catucci, S. 2018, *Prison, Architecture and Humans*, Cappelen Damm Akademisk / NOASP, Norway.
- Freire, P. & Ramos, M.B. 1972, *Pedagogy of the oppressed*, Penguin, Harmondsworth.
- Garland, D. 1990, *Punishment and modern society : a study in social theory*, Clarendon Press, Oxford.
- Gauthier, D. 1990, *Social Contract Theory*, Basil Blackwell, Oxford.
- Gehry, F. 2017, *Advance Design Studio. Frank O. Gehry*, viewed 13 May 2021 2021, <<https://www.architecture.yale.edu/courses/13736-frank-gehry>>.
- Government, N. 2021, *Reducing reidivism in the prison population*, NSW Government viewed 08/09 2021, <<https://www.nsw.gov.au/premiers-priorities/reducing-recidivism-prison-population>>.
- Governments, A.S.a.T. 2012, *STANDARD GUIDELINES FOR CORRECTIONS IN AUSTRALIA Revised 2012*.
- Hamilton, J.G. & Jaaniste, L. 2009, 'Content, structure and orientations of the practice-led exegesis', *QUT Digital Repository*.
- Hancock, P. & Jewkes, Y. 2011, 'Architectures of incarceration The spatial pains of imprisonment', *Punishment and Society*, vol. 13, no. 5, p. 19.
- Haraway, D. 1988, 'Situated Knowledges: The Science Question in Feminism and the Privilege of Partial Perspective', *Feminist studies*, vol. 14, no. 3, pp. 575-99.
- Harding, S.G. 2004, *The feminist standpoint theory reader : intellectual and political controversies*, Routledge, New York ;
- Hsieh, H.-F. & Shannon, S.E. 2005, 'Three Approaches to Qualitative Content Analysis', *Qualitative Health Research*, vol. 15, no. 9, pp. 1277-88.
- Hyde, R. 2019, 'For the Public Good: Rebuilding the Architectural Profession's Social Contract', *Architectural Design*, vol. 89, no. 3, pp. 82-9.
- ICPA 2021, *ICPA Planning & Design Webinar: Prisons of the Future*, International Corrections and Prisons Association, Brussels, viewed 27 May 2021 2021, <<https://icpa.org/events/icpa-planning-design-webinar-prisons-of-the-future/>>.
- ICRC 2021, *Who We Are*, viewed 02 09 2021, <<https://www.icrc.org/en/who-we-are>>.
- Jewkes, Y., Humphreys, K., Goldman, M., Thurston, H., Patience, J., Davidson, S. & Steer, R. 2016, *Rehabilitation by Design: Influencing Change in Prisoner Behaviour*, Gleeds, UK.
- Jewkes, Y. & Moran, D. 2017, 'Prison Architecture and Design: Perspectives from Criminology and Carceral Geography', *The Oxford Handbook of Criminology*, vol. 6, Oxford University Press, Oxford, p. 21.
- Jewkes, Y., Slee, E. & Moran, D. 2017, *The visual retreat of the prison non-places for non-people*, Taylor and Francis.
- Johnston, N. 1973, *The human cage: A brief history of prison architecture*, Published for the American Foundation, Institute of Corrections by Walker, New York.
- Khangura, S., Konnyu, K., Cushman, R., Grimshaw, J. & Moher, D. 2012, 'Evidence summaries: the evolution of a rapid review approach', *Systematic reviews*, vol. 1, no. 1, pp. 10-.
- Kronick, R. & Thomas, D.A. 2008, 'Prisoner Citizen: Carl Upchurch, Labelling Theory, and Social Interactionism', *Journal of Progressive Human Services*, vol. 19, no. 2, pp. 112-4.
- Latour, B. 2004, 'Why Has Critique Run out of Steam? From Matters of Fact to Matters of Concern', *Critical Inquiry*, vol. 30, no. 2, pp. 225-48.
- Leurs, B. 2011, 'Design Scripts: Designing (inter)actions with intentions', Slides, vol. web, no 2, Slideshare, Lahti University of Applied Sciences, 2011.

- Liebling, A. 1999, 'Doing Research in Prison:: Breaking the Silence?', *Theoretical Criminology*, vol. 3, no. 2, pp. 147-73.
- Lulham, R. & Klippan, L. 2017, *From expected reoffender to trusted neighbour: why we should rethink our prisons*, @ConversationEDU, <<http://theconversation.com/from-expected-reoffender-to-trusted-neighbour-why-we-should-rethink-our-prisons-60114>>.
- Lulham, R., Tomkin, D., Jewkes, Y. & Porporino, F. 2016, 'The risk of 'a cold conservatism' in correctional facility design: The case for design innovation'.
- Mackenzie, B. 2020, *Australia's largest prison will be big business on the New South Wales north coast*, ABC, North Coast, viewed 03/02/2021 2021, <<https://www.abc.net.au/news/2020-06-25/australias-largest-prison-opens-in-grafton-nsw/12389622>>.
- Manzini, E., Coad, R., Friedman, K. & Stolterman, E. 2015, *Design, When Everybody Designs: An Introduction to Design for Social Innovation*, The MIT Press, Cambridge.
- Maruna, S. 2001, *Making Good. How Ex-Convicts Reform and Rebuild Their Lives*, American Psychological Association, Washington DC.
- MASS Design Group 2021, *About*, viewed 12 May 21 2021, <<https://edit.massdesigngroup.org/about>>.
- MASS_Design_Group 2019, *Mission / MASS Design Group*, @MASSDesignLab, viewed 08 July 2019 2019, <<https://massdesigngroup.org/about>>.
- Matravers, M., Liebling, A., Hechinger, S. & James, E. 2020, 'The Future of Prisons?', Zoom presentation, no 4, University of York.
- Matter Architects, Bernheimer, L., O'Brien, R. & Barnes, R. 2017, *Wellbeing in Prison design. A guide*, Royal Institute of British Architects.
- Mattern, S.C. 2021, *A city is not a computer : other urban intelligences*, Princeton University Press, Princeton, New Jersey.
- McGregor, F. 2012, 'Intensive Learning Centre – design brief', Design Brief, Corrective Services NSW, Sydney
- McIntosh, T. 2018, *A chance to leave mass incarceration behind*, viewed 26 May 2018, <<https://www.newsroom.co.nz/@future-learning/2018/05/24/111198?slug=a-chance-to-leave-mass-incarceration-behind>>.
- McNeill, D. 2006, 'Globalization and the ethics of architectural design', *City (London, England)*, vol. 10, no. 1, pp. 49-58.
- McNeill, F. 2012, 'Four forms of 'offender' rehabilitation: Towards an interdisciplinary perspective', *Legal and criminological psychology*, vol. 17, no. 1, pp. 18-36.
- Milech, B.H. & Schilo, A. 2004, *'Exit Jesus': Relating the Exegesis and Creative/Production Components of a Research Thesis*, viewed 29 June 2020, <<http://www.textjournal.com.au/speciss/issue3/milechschilo.htm>>.
- Moran, D. 2013, 'Carceral Geography and the Spatialities of Prison Visiting: Visitation, Recidivism, and Hyperincarceration', *Environment and Planning D: Society and Space*, vol. 31, no. 1, pp. 174-90.
- Moran, D., Jewkes, Y. & Lorne, C. 2019, 'Designing for Imprisonment: Architectural Ethics and Prison Design'.
- Moran, D., Jones, P.I., Jordaan, J.A. & Porter, A.E. 2020, 'Does Nature Contact in Prison Improve Well-Being? Mapping Land Cover to Identify the Effect of Greenspace on Self-Harm and Violence in Prisons in England and Wales', *Annals of the American Association of Geographers*, vol. 111, no. 6, pp. 1779-95.
- Moustakas, C.E. 1994, 'Epoche, Phenomenological Reduction, Imaginative Variation, and Synthesis', SAGE Publications, Inc, Thousand Oaks, p. 84.
- Nadel, M.R. & Mears, D.P. 2018, 'Building with no end in sight: the theory and effects of prison architecture', *Corrections*, pp. 1-18.
- Nations, U. 2015, *The United Nations Minimum Rules for the Treatment of Prisoners*, V.16-00193, UNODC Justice Section, Division for Operations, Vienna, viewed 06 April 2017.
- Nations, U. 2020, *Nelson Mandela Rules*, United Nations, New York, viewed 11 May 2021 2021, <https://www.un.org/en/events/mandeladay/mandela_rules.shtml>.
- Nicholls, S. 2016, 'Prisons minister: I wish I didn't have to spend \$3.8b on jail capacity', *NSW*.

- Norberg-Schulz, C. 1983, 'Heidegger's Thinking on Architecture', *Perspecta*, vol. 20, pp. 61-8.
- Patton, M.Q. 1990, *Qualitative evaluation and research methods*, 2nd ed. edn, Sage Publications, Newbury Park, Calif.
- Perez-Gomez, A. 2016, *Attunement: Architectural meaning after the crisis of modern science*, MIT Press, United States.
- Philipson, G. 2018, *Opinion – Australia's jails a national disgrace*, viewed 28 Feb 2018, <<https://www.governmentnews.com.au/2018/02/opinion-australias-jails-national-disgrace/>>.
- Piché, J., Gaucher, B. & Walby, K. 2014, 'Facilitating Prisoner Ethnography: An Alternative Approach to "Doing Prison Research Differently"', *Qualitative inquiry*, vol. 20, no. 4, pp. 449-60.
- Rapoport, A. 1990, *The meaning of the built environment : a nonverbal communication approach*, University of Arizona Press, Tucson.
- Rawls, J. 1990, *Social Contract Theory*, Basil Blackwell, Oxford.
- Rousseau, J.J. 1977, *The social contract*, Penguin, Harmondsworth.
- Rubenstein, K. & Lenagh-Maguire, N. 2014, *Law and Democracy - Contemporary Questions*, ANU Press, ACT.
- Rubin, A.T. 2021, *Rocking qualitative social science : an irreverent guide to rigorous research*, Stanford University Press, Stanford, California.
- Rubin, B. 2012, 'Shifting Social Contracts and the Sociological Imagination', *Social Forces*, vol. 91, no. 2, pp. 327-46.
- Rust, C., Mottram, J. & Till, J. 2007, *AHRC Research Review Practice-Led Research in Art, Design and Architecture*, Sheffield Hallam University.
- Scharff-Smith, P. 2015, 'Reform and Research: Re-connecting Prison and Society in the 21st Century', *International journal for crime, justice and social democracy*, vol. 4, no. 1, pp. 33-49.
- Schön, D.A. 1992, *The Reflective Practitioner: How Professionals Think in Action*, Routledge, Abingdon, Oxon.
- Scott, D. & Sim, J. 2020, *For Abolition: Essays on Prisons and Socialist Ethics*, Waterside Press, Hook.
- Seamon, D. 2000, 'A Way of Seeing People and Place: Phenomenology in Environment-Behaviour Research', *Theoretical Perspectives in Environment-Behaviour Research*, pp. 157-78.
- Seamon, D. 2017a, 'Architecture and Phenomenology', in D. Lu (ed.), *The Routledge Companion to Contemporary Architectural History*, Routledge, London.
- Seamon, D.i.J., B 2017b, *Hermeneutics and Architecture: Buildings-in-themselves and Interpretive Trustworthiness*, vol. 5, Springer, Cham.
- Simmons, A.J. 2010, 'Ideal and Nonideal Theory', *Philosophy & public affairs*, vol. 38, no. 1, pp. 5-36.
- Simon, J. & Sparks, R. 2013, *The SAGE handbook of punishment and society*.
- Slee, E. 2021, 'Title Unknown. Topic 'external aesthetics of UK prisons'', University of Birmingham, Birmingham UK.
- Smith, P. 2008, 'Punishment and Culture', University of Chicago Press, Chicago.
- Smith, R.A. & Bugni, V. 2002, 'Design physical environments as related to selves, symbols, and social reality: A proposal for a humanistic paradigm shift in architecture', *Humanity and Society*, vol. 26, no. 4, p. 20.
- Smith, R.W. & Bugni, V. 2006, 'Symbolic Interaction Theory and Architecture', *Symbolic Interaction*, vol. 29, no. 2, pp. 123-5.
- Sorkin, M. 2013, 'Drawing the Line: Architects and Prisons', *The Nation*, viewed 16 07 21, <<https://www.thenation.com/article/archive/drawing-line-architects-and-prisons/>>.
- Stephan, P. 2015, 'Designing 'matters of concern' (Latour): A future design task?' pp. 202-26.
- Tobe, R., Simon, P.J. & Temple, P.N. 2013, *Architecture and justice: Judicial meanings in the public realm*, Ashgate Publishing, United Kingdom.
- Toews, B. & Howard, Z. 2012, 'Ways of knowing for a restorative worldview'.
- Turner, J. 2012, 'Criminals with 'Community Spirit': Practising Citizenship in the Hidden World of the Prison', *Space & Polity*, vol. 16, no. 3, pp. 321-34.
- Standard Minimum Rules for the Treatment of Prisoners 1977 (2076 (LXII))*.
- Unknown 2019, 'Men's Sheds', interviewed by Unknown, 2019.
- UNODC, U.N.O.o.D.a.C. 2007, 'Handbook of basic principles and promising practices on the Alternatives to Prison', in U.N.O.f.P.S. UNOPS (ed.)UN,

- Copenhagen, viewed 2016, <https://www.unodc.org/pdf/criminal_justice/Handbook_of_Basic_Principles_and_Promising_Practices_on_Alternatives_to_Imprisonment.pdf>.
- UNOPS, U.N.O.f.P.S. 2016, 'Technical Guidance For Prison Planning', in U.N.O.f.P.S. UNOPS (ed.)UN, Copenhagen, viewed 2016, <https://www.unops.org/SiteCollectionDocuments/Publications/TechnicalGuidance_PrisonPlanning.pdf>.
- Valters, C. 2015, 'Theories of Change', *Time for a radical approach to learning in development*, Overseas Development Institute, UK.
- van Buren, D. 2020, 'Q&A: Oakland Architect Deanna Van Buren Is Building a World Without Prisons', interviewed by V. Rawlings, Ms.
- van Manen, M. 1990, *Researching lived experience human science for an action sensitive pedagogy*, State University of New York Press, Albany, N.Y.
- VERA Institute of Justice 2020, *About*, VERA, viewed 12 May 21 2021, <<https://www.vera.org/about>>.
- Vera Institute of Justice & MASS Design Group 2018, *Reimagining Prison*, Vera Institute of Justice.
- Victorian Government 2021, *The case for good design: Justice. Better-designed Prisons*, <<https://www.ovga.vic.gov.au/case-good-design-justice-guide-government#better-designed-prisons>>.
- The Truman Show* 1988, United States of America, 1988.
- Wener, R.E. 2012, *The environmental psychology of prisons and jails: Creating humane spaces in secure settings*, Cambridge University Press, United Kingdom.
- Wolcott, H. 1990, *Qualitative inquiry in education : the continuing debate*, Teachers College, Columbia University, New York.

Appendices

Appendix A
Research Management – Ethics Approvals



Justice
Corrective Services

Henry Deane Building
20 Lee Street, Sydney
GPO Box 31, Sydney NSW 2001
Tel 02 8346 1333 | Fax 02 8346 1415
www.justice.nsw.gov.au

D18/683421

30 October 2018

Mr Kevin Bradley
Faculty of Design Architecture and Building
School of the Environment
PO Box 123
Broadway NSW 2007

Dear Mr Bradley

I refer to your research application titled '*A practice based research project investigating the relationship between prison design and citizenship.*'

Your project aims to capture the views of inmates and staff in CSNSW on what they consider good prison design and practice. Particularly, the inmate's perception of the prison building environment as part of social infrastructure and how it may assist them to maintain a connection to their future role back in society.

The conditions of approval are that you comply with the '*Terms and Conditions of Research Approval*' [Attachment 1].

I wish you every success in your endeavours.

Yours sincerely

Production Note:
Signature removed
prior to publication.

LUKE GRANT
A/COMMISSIONER



ATTACHMENT 1:

TERMS AND CONDITIONS OF RESEARCH APPROVAL

Project entitled:

"A practice based research project investigating the relationship between prison design and citizenship."

Chief Investigator:

Mr Kevin BRADLEY
Faculty of Design Architecture & School of the
Built Environment
University of Technology Sydney

1. RESEARCH PROTOCOLS —

- 1.1 Approval is granted for the above research project, in accordance with the research application dated 26 April 2018 and additional research documentation, **except where the original protocols have been superseded by any specific conditions which have been documented in the Commissioner's attached correspondence.**
- 1.2 Specifically, the study aims to capture the views of inmates and staff in CSNSW on what they consider good prison design and practice, particularly the type of prison design which may assist inmates to maintain or learn the values and responsibilities of being a citizen in the general community. The Designing Out Crime Research Centre has undertaken previous projects for CSNSW.
- 1.3 The project will be undertaken in three (3) stages.
- 1.4 Stage 1 aims to capture and analyse individual study participant's beliefs, experiences and perceptions in regard to citizenship and the built environment. Participants will be staff and inmates at specific locations to be determined by CSNSW. Long Bay, South Coast and Junee Correctional Centres are nominated.
- 1.5 The researcher will do this by way of semi-structured interviews, environmental observation and a card sort activity. Interviews will be approximately 45 minutes long with up to six (6) inmates and six (6) staff from each centre being recruited. The interviews will focus on the individual's perceptions of the effects of the prison building environment, how they maintain a connection to their role, or future role in society, how they view the prison as part of social infrastructure and how it exhibits social values.
- 1.6 Stage 2 of the project will involve the analysis of data collected in Stage 1, which will then be presented to staff and inmate participants in group design workshops in order to develop specific design propositions representative of the groups. Separate workshops will be held for each group of staff and inmates in each centre and will be approximately 90 minutes in length.

- 3.4 For relevant projects, all requests for data information from Corrective Services NSW Corrections Research Evaluation & Statistics Unit will be processed at a time and date suitable to the Unit. A minimum period of three months should be allowed by the Chief Investigator and Co-investigators for the provision of requested data.
- 3.5 Should any harm or risk to participants or breaches of any approved protocols be discovered during the course of conducting the research project, the Chief Investigator must report this immediately to the Assistant Commissioner, Offender Management & Programs (ph.: 02 – 8346 – 1958).
- 3.6 Individual information, data or unit records from this research project must not be linked in any way to any other individual person's information, data or unit records from other past, present or future information sources or research studies, unless expressly stated in the original research application.
- 3.7 Approval for this project is valid for twelve (12) months from the specified date of approval. A written request for the renewal of the project for a further period must be submitted by the Chief Investigator if the project is incomplete, for whatever reason(s), at the end of the original twelve (12) month approval period.
- 3.8 A copy of any reports and/or research findings must be submitted to the Director, Corrections Research, Evaluation and Statistics, for eventual inclusion in the Corrective Services NSW library.
- 3.9 The Chief Investigator and Co-investigators consent to the release of the following personal information which will be published in the annual Corrective Services NSW Research Program under 'Part V: Requests to conduct research in NSW correctional facilities: List of approved projects'.

Investigator/s: Mr Kevin BRADLEY
Faculty of Design Architecture & School of the
Built Environment
University of Technology Sydney

Dr Michael ER
Faculty of Design Architecture & School of the
Built Environment
University of Technology Sydney

Dr Rohan LULHAM
Faculty of Design Architecture & School of the
Built Environment
University of Technology Sydney

Project Title: A practice based research project investigating the relationship
between prison design and citizenship.

- 3.11 The Commissioner reserves the right to amend or withdraw approval for any research project at any stage.
- 3.12 Under no circumstances will the Chief Investigators or Co-Investigators depart from the approved protocol without the prior written consent of the Commissioner of Corrective Services NSW.
- 3.13 **Prior to commencing the research study**, a signed copy of these terms and conditions, containing the "*Declaration by the Project Investigator(s)*", must be submitted to the Director, Corrections Research, Evaluation and Statistics.

- 1.7 Stage 3 of the project will involve the bringing together of the design propositions from each group in each correctional centre into a comprehensive design proposition – the 'Citizen Prison Project.' A presentation of approximately 90 minutes will be made to each group of staff and inmates in each of the three (3) correctional centres.
- 1.18 For relevant projects, the Chief Investigators and co-investigators must ensure that participants are free to decline to answer any questions or discontinue their participation at any time, without penalty or prejudice of any kind.
- 1.19 The Chief Investigators and co-investigators must ensure that identifying information, such as individual names, etc., does not appear on any research notes, electronic files, or any other recorded mediums, where an alternative unique identifier should be utilised.
- 1.20 The Chief Investigator and co-investigators must ensure that identifying information, such as individual names, does not appear in any reports or research findings. The information must not be presented in any manner which could allow the inadvertent identification of any individual person.
- 1.21 The Chief Investigators and co-investigators must ensure that confidentiality is strictly maintained at all times and that research materials (including research notes, electronic data, etc.) and consent forms are stored separately and securely (e.g. in locked filing cabinets, password protected file access).
- 1.22 The Chief Investigator and co-investigator must ensure that the only reports or publications to be produced from this research project are those detailed in the original research application.

2. AMENDMENTS —

- 2.1. There are no additional conditions of approval for the project.
- 2.2 For relevant projects, criminal record checks must be undertaken by Corrective Services NSW on all external researchers involved in the research project who require entry into any NSW correctional centre. In fulfilling this requirement, the Chief Investigator must contact the General Manager of the correctional centre, in the first instance, in order to initiate the criminal record check.

3. CONDITIONS —

- 3.1 For relevant projects, this approval is dependent on the Chief Investigator and Co-investigators not unduly interfering with the normal operations or the good order of any Corrective Services facility in any way.
- 3.2 For relevant projects, this research is to be undertaken at a date and time suitable to the relevant General Manager of each Correctional Centre. The Chief Investigator and Co-investigators must comply with all supervision, safety, search and security controls imposed at all times.
- 3.3 For relevant projects, due to the possible sensitivity of the subject matter, debriefing and counselling must be provided to individuals by appropriate delegated staff, when required.

DECLARATION BY THE PROJECT INVESTIGATOR(s)

Prior to commencing the research study, this declaration is to be completed and submitted to: Director, Corrections Research, Evaluation and Statistics, Corrective Services NSW, GPO Box 31, Sydney NSW 2001.

We, the undersigned, as applicants for the research study entitled "A practice based research project investigating the relationship between prison design and citizenship" and referred to in the application for approval to conduct research dated 26 April 2018 declare that:

- (1) We have read and agree to comply with the terms and conditions of approval specified in this Attachment 1.
- (2) We accept full responsibility for the conduct of all aspects of the research project.
- (3) Under no circumstances will we depart from the approved protocol, as stated in these terms and conditions, without the prior written consent of the Commissioner of Corrective Services NSW.

Signed this 7th day of November 2018

In the presence of:

Production Note:
Signature removed prior to publication.

Signature of Chief Investigator
Mr Kevin BRADLEY

Production Note:
Signature removed prior to publication.

Signature of Witness

Chloe Young
Name of Witness (please print)

Signed this 7th day of November 2018

In the presence of:

Production Note:
Signature removed prior to publication.

Signature of Co-Investigator
Dr Rohan LULHAM

Production Note:
Signature removed prior to publication.

Signature of Witness

Chloe Young
Name of Witness (please print)

Signed this 7th day of November 2018

In the presence of:

Production Note:
Signature removed prior to publication.

Signature of Co-Investigator
Dr Michael ER

Production Note:
Signature removed prior to publication.

Signature of Witness

Chloe Young
Name of Witness (please print)

Signed this day of 2018

In the presence of:

Signature of Co-Investigator

Signature of Witness

Name of Witness (please print)

Corrective Services NSW

Henry Deane Building
20 Lee Street, Sydney
GPO Box 31, Sydney NSW 2001
Tel 02 8346 1333 | Fax 02 8346 1415
www.justice.nsw.gov.au

D20/0208713

16 March 2020

Mr Kevin Bradley
Faculty of Design Architecture & Building
School of the Environment
University of Technology Sydney
PO BOX 123
Broadway MNSW 2007

Dear Mr Bradley

I refer to your letter dated 2 March 2020 requesting an amendment to your research application titled *'A practice based research project investigating the relationship between prison design and citizenship'*.

Your requested amendment follows from your study in 2018 which captured the views of inmates and staff in selected CSNSW centres on what they considered good prison design and practice.

The research phases of your project are complete and now you are seeking to develop conceptual designs. Your aim is to synthesise the research's findings by utilising the Metropolitan Remand and Reception Centre (MRRC) as a reference. You chose the MRRC as your subject site as it one of the main entries for offenders to the correctional system in NSW. Your inspection of the MRRC is to examine the physical site and will not be a critique of the current facility, but a reimagining of what it could be as an academic exercise.

I am happy to approve the proposed amendment as outlined. This approval is conditional on your continued compliance with the Terms and Conditions of Approval signed on 7 November 2018.

I wish you every success in your endeavours.

Yours sincerely

Production Note:
Signature removed
prior to publication.PETER SEVERIN
COMMISSIONER



Human Ethics Application

Application ID :	ETH18-2448
Application Title :	Citizen prison: Investigation into a citizen-centred approach to prison design
Date of Submission :	N/A
Primary Investigator :	Mr Michael B. O'Leir, Investigator
Other Personnel :	Mr Kevin Bradley, S Research Student Dr Rohan Alfred Wilham, Co-Supervisor

Section 1: Ethics Portal

Select your application type

What type of application are you looking for?

Please do not change your application type without first consulting with the Ethics Secretariat (9514 9772).*

- New application (including scope-checking for nil/negligible risk research)
- Ratification of existing approval
- Transfer of existing approval
- Evaluation of teaching and learning activities
- Amendment to existing approval
- Program approval

You have selected "new application (including scope checking for nil/negligible risk research)". This option allows you to create a new form. The system will check if your application can be approved by the Faculty or whether it requires full ethics approval by the HREC. Please click "save" before continuing.

What should I know before I start?

Would you like more information on:

- This system
- The ethics process
- Purpose of the ethics review process

The ethics process

This form has a risk assessment which will help decide whether your research is nil/negligible risk or whether you will need to complete a full ethics application form. If you are unsure how to answer these questions or disagree with the outcome you can contact us by phone (02) 9514 9772 or by email the [Ethics Secretariat](#).

Staff applications: If your research is nil/negligible risk, you will receive an email after submitting this form which will confirm this. If your research is low or high risk, it will be submitted automatically to your local research office after you click on Submit.

Student applications: Your application will first be reviewed by your supervisor. If your research is nil/negligible risk, you will receive an email after your supervisor has endorsed the application. If your research is low or high risk, it will be submitted automatically to your local research office after your supervisor has endorsed your application online.

For more information, go to [Staff Connect](#).

What you should read when completing this form

This form should be read in conjunction with the relevant [University policies and guidelines](#), the [National Statement on Ethical Conduct in Research Involving Humans \(PDF, 652Kb\)](#) and the [Australian Code for the Responsible Conduct of Research \(2007\) \(PDF, 829Kb\)](#).

Section 1A: Risk evaluation

Risk A

Determining the level of risk

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar. For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#).

Please answer each question carefully and consecutively.

If you need to contact the [Research Ethics Officer](#) you can call (02) 9514 9772.

Does your research involve:

Projects involving covert observation, active concealment, or planned deception of participants

e.g. covert observation of the hand-washing behaviour of hospital employees, undisclosed role-playing by a researcher, etc. Does NOT include observation in a public place WITHOUT the use of photographs, images, video or audio footage ([Chapter 2.3, page 19](#))

*

- Yes
- No

Targeted recruitment or analysis of data from any of the vulnerable groups listed below (or where any of these vulnerable groups are likely to be significantly over-represented in the group being studied)

- Women who are pregnant and the human fetus ([Chapter 4.1, page 46](#))
- Children and young people (under 18 years) ([Chapter 4.2, page 50](#))
- People in dependent or unequal relationships (e.g. lecturer/student [except T&L], doctor/patient, employer/employee) ([Chapter 4.3, page 53](#))
- People highly dependent on medical care who may be unable to give consent ([Chapter 4.4, page 55](#))
- People with a cognitive impairment, an intellectual disability, or a mental illness (may include the disadvantaged/homeless) ([Chapter 4.5, page 58](#))
- People who may be involved in illegal activities (including those affected e.g. victims of domestic violence) ([Chapter 4.6, page 60](#))
- Aboriginal and Torres Strait Islander Peoples ([Chapter 4.7, page 62](#))

*

- Yes
 No

People in / from countries that are politically unstable; where human rights are restricted; and/or where the research involves economically disadvantaged, exploited or marginalised participants from such countries e.g. includes countries that score <50 on the Transparency Index

*

- Yes
 No

Collection, use or disclosure of personal information WITHOUT consent of the participant

- Name, address and other details about the participant (e.g. date of birth, financial information etc.)
- Photographs, images, video or audio footage
- Fingerprints

*

- Yes
 No

Collection, use or disclosure of health information

- Personal information (as defined above) collected to provide, or in providing, a health service (e.g. admission to hospital, GP visit, pathology, pharmacy etc.)
- Information or an opinion about:
 - (i) the health or a disability (at any time) of an individual; or
 - (ii) an individual's expressed wishes about the future provision of health services to him
 - (iii) a health service provided, or to be provided, to an individual
- Personal information about organ donation
- Genetic information about an individual or the individual's relatives

*

- Yes
 No

Collection, use or disclosure of sensitive information

Racial, ethnic information, political, religious and philosophical beliefs, sexual activity or identity, and trade union membership

*

- Yes
 No

Activity that potentially infringes the privacy or professional reputation of participants, providers or organisations

e.g. observation in the workplace, collection of commercially confidential information, etc.
Commercially confidential information = Any information which is not in the public domain or publicly available, and where disclosure may undermine the economic interest or competitive position of the owner of the information (TGA adopted definition from European Medicines Agency (EMA)). N.B. if canvassing opinion via expert-to-expert modes of data collection(?) with full disclosure, consent, and information regarding identification and use in the public domain, answer "No" here

*

- Yes
 No

Establishment of a register, database, or databank of identifiable information for possible use in future research projects

*

- Yes
 No

Collection, transfer and/or banking of human biospecimens.

e.g. tissue, blood, urine, sputum etc.

*

- Yes
 No

Any significant alteration to routine care or service provided to participants

e.g. deviation from standard care or usual practice

*

- Yes
 No

Prospective assignment of human participants or groups of humans to one or more health-related interventions to evaluate the effects on health outcomes

[WHO definition of a Clinical Trial](#)

*

- Yes
 No

Potential for participants to experience harm

e.g. physical, psychological, social, economic and/or legal ([Chapter 2.1, page 13](#))

*

- Yes
 No

High Risk

Section 2: Project information

Project title

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar.
For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

Application ID (automatically generated):

ETH18-2448

Application Title:*

Citizen prison: Investigation into a citizen-centred approach to prison design

Please note that the HREC is now granting a standard approval period for the research proposals.

The approval period for your project will be specified in your approval letter.
Please also note that research should not commence until ethics approval has been granted. The Committee cannot grant retrospective approval for data that has already been collected.

Ethics category code (automatically selected):*

Human

Is this a resubmission of a previous application?*

- Yes
 No

Is this a pilot study? *

- Yes
 No

Has a pilot study been conducted as part of this project? *

- Yes
 No

Please save and continue to the next page

Consultation

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar. For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

Have you undertaken any consultation in preparing this application?*

- Yes
 No

Please describe (1500 character limit)*

Primary consultation has been with my immediate supervisors:
 Dr Michael Er, and Dr Rohan Lulham.
 Industry consultation:
 Isabel Hight - previously NSW Corrective Services Project Director,
 Infrastructure Strategy
 Lindsay Charles - previously NSW Public Works Project Manager on prison construction

Please save and continue to the next page

Section 3: Personnel

Investigators

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar. For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

Are there external investigators or personnel listed on this protocol?*

- Yes
 No

Is this application for a student project?*

- Yes
 No

Students - Please note that once you submit your application is submitted it will go directly to your supervisor and not to the Committee. Once your supervisor endorses your application it will come to the Research Ethics Officer for review. Please hold off on printing your hardcopy until you have received feedback from the Research Ethics Officer. Your electronic application must be submitted by the closing date.

Personnel Table

Position type	In the personnel table use the following positions from the drop-down list
Chief Investigator	1Chief Investigator
Co Investigator	3Assoc. Investigator
Supervisor	1Chief Investigator
Co Supervisor	Co-Supervisor
Research Student	5Research Student

Further options are available for Research/Project Managers and Administrators. **The main contact should be marked as 'primary' and should be a UTS staff member. Please click on 'More Criteria' located on the top right hand side of the table to find personnel.**

If any details are incorrect or missing please contact the Ethics Secretariat on (02) 9514 9772 or by [email](#).

Instructions on how to add a person to the personnel table:

1. Click on 'More criteria' which is located on the top right hand corner of the table below
2. Enter the surname (and given name if the surname is common) in the fields marked 'Surname' and 'Given name' and click 'Search'
- If the system cannot find the person you are looking for you have the option of adding them in - just click "Ok" when the pop-up window shows.
3. Click on the name of the person you wish to add
4. If they are the primary contact (e.g. Chief Investigator/Supervisor), tick "Yes" under 'Primary contact'
5. Select the position from the drop-down list (e.g. Chief Investigator/Research Student)
6. Click on the green tick

Students must add their supervisors to their application and must mark their primary supervisor as a Chief Investigator and as a primary contact. Students should be listed as "5Research student"

Internal personnel listed on this ethics protocol:

*

1	Primary	Yes
	ID	030093
	Surname	Er
	Given Name	Michael
	Name	Mr Michael Er
	Position	Chief Investigator
	Type	Internal
	AOU	DAB.School of Built Environment
	Managing Unit	Design, Architecture and Building
	Email Address	Michael.Er@uts.edu.au
	Contact Phone	8031
2	Primary	No
	ID	109476
	Surname	Bradley
	Given Name	Kevin
	Name	Mr Kevin Bradley
	Position	5Research Student
	Type	Internal
	AOU	DAB.DIRC Design Innovation Research Centre
	Managing Unit	Design, Architecture and Building
	Email Address	Kevin.Bradley@uts.edu.au
	Contact Phone	
3	Primary	No
	ID	111141
	Surname	Lulham
	Given Name	Rohan
	Name	Dr Rohan Alfred Lulham
	Position	Co-Supervisor
	Type	Internal
	AOU	DAB.DIRC Design Innovation Research Centre
	Managing Unit	Design, Architecture and Building
	Email Address	Rohan.Lulham@uts.edu.au
	Contact Phone	4611

If you cannot find a person through the personnel table(s) above, please enter their details here (title, name, organisation, department, phone number, address, email address and their position on this protocol). (2000 character limit)

This question is not answered.

Please provide additional (or preferred) contact details of any of the people listed on the project if necessary (2000 character limit)

This question is not answered.

Please provide details of any formal qualifications ([REF NS 1.1\(e\)](#)) of each person listed on the project (2000 character limit)*

Dr Michael Er - B.Build Grad.Dip.IT M.Inf.Tech PhD
Dr Rohan Lulham - B.Psych - Architecture, PhD (University of Sydney)
Mr Kevin Bradley - B.Arts (Architecture). M.Arch. M.DesScience (University of Sydney)

Please outline the experience of each person listed on this project relevant to this application (2000 character limit)*

Dr Michael Er - Senior Lecturer, School of the Built Environment
Dr Michael Er is a Senior Lecturer in the School of the Built Environment at UTS. His PhD is in computer science and in particular in information systems and innovation development, adoption and diffusion. He is well published in the construction project management field.

Dr Rohan Lulham - Research Fellow, DIRC Design Innovation Research Centre
Rohan's research covers the areas of design, environmental psychology and criminology, with particular research interests in design practice, and social innovation. He is currently leading projects that seek to bring innovation to correctional design practice.

Kevin Bradley -
Kevin is a registered Architect and Senior Research Associate with Designing Out Crime. He has research and design experience in correctional environments since 2012.

Primary AOU*

DAB.School of Built Environment

Managing Unit

Design, Architecture and Building

Please save and continue to the next page

Student details

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar. For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

Degree being undertaken (500 character limit)*

8100 - PhD Thesis: Design

Have you been successful in your doctoral/masters assessment? *

- Yes
 No

Please make sure you attach a copy of your DA/Stage one confirmation in the attachments section.

Students, please read carefully: Your application should be reviewed by the Ethics Secretariat prior to submitting to the Committee. Once you have completed this application and followed the submission instructions, your application will go to your supervisor for review. Once your supervisor has endorsed the application it will come to the Ethics Secretariat for a pre-review. This pre-review process is necessary to ensure that your application is complete, has all necessary attachments, and that the quality of responses to the questions meets the Committee's expectations. Your application should therefore be submitted at least one week prior to the closing date. If you do not submit your application in time, it may be delayed and held off until the next closing date.

Section 4: Funding

Funding details

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar. For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

Have you received funding in relation to this research?*

- Yes
 No

Do you have a RM Project ID number?*

- Yes
 No

List the source of funding (e.g. funding body / type)
(REF NS Page 8 "When is ethical review needed?", 2.2.6(f), 3.3.5(a), 3.3.18(b), 4.8.6, 5.2.7, and 5.7)
(2000 character limit)*

UTS Doctoral Scholarships. APA Equivalent Living Allowance FT.

Total amount of funding obtained, including in-kind contribution (please indicate which is applicable)
(1500 character limit):*

\$27,082.00 per annum

What is your relationship to the funding source? (e.g. grant recipient, industry partner, contractor, employee,
office-bearer, personal, other) (1500 character limit)*

grant recipient

Please save and continue to the next page

Funding continued

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar.
For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

Is there any potential conflict of interest for you as a researcher because of the funding or commercial arrangements?*

- Yes
 No

Are there any constraints on the research as a result of the funding arrangements, e.g. to intellectual property,
publication, etc? ([Section 4, The Code](#))*

- Yes
 No

Please save and continue to the next page

Section 5: Methodology

Description

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar.
For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

The purpose of this section is to place your research in context for the HREC and demonstrate your ability to conduct the research. The HREC may only approve research which is methodologically sound. Remember to use simple language that can be understood by people from a variety of backgrounds. Avoid jargon and acronyms.

What are the hypotheses/goals/aims/objectives of your research? Please include a brief description using plain English explaining your research aims (approximately 100 words) (1500 character limit)*

The objective of the research is to capture and interpret a broad range of beliefs/experiences/perceptions of citizenship and penal design as a new body of socially constructed architectural knowledge in prison design. The research will investigate the qualities of prison environments in NSW and their influence on the individual's lifetime role as a citizen, rather than the temporary role of the inmate.

Note: Clinical Trials, Recruitment of Participants and Data Collection are dealt with later so you will not need to describe them in detail below

Please provide a brief description of the research design including research questions and proposed methods for conducting the research (approximately 250 words) (1500 character limit)*

The research is design-based and, by sourcing data from participants within and outside the prison environment, investigates new socially informed prison design.
Research question 1: What architectural style or amenity for places of incarceration would facilitate and maintain the values and responsibilities of being a citizen?
Research question 2: What architectural style or amenity for places of incarceration would exhibit the civic qualities of just punishment?
The research design is structured in three stages with specific methods applied at each stage; Pre-Design (semi-structured interviews + card sort activity), Design (stakeholder group design workshop), and Post Design (stakeholder critique + thesis exhibition).

What do you hope the outcome(s) of this research will be? (1500 character limit)*

My hope for this research is that it alters the way in which prisons are currently designed. My hope is the project can alter architecture practice by investigating the research questions through socially inclusive design-based methods so prisons are considered part of, and can contribute to a functioning society rather than to simply facilitating a social vacuum.
My ultimate hope for the research is that it serves as a catalyst to shift the boundaries of the institutional and social relationships so future prison environments can better serve the community. The current mindset of punishment and exclusion has not changed significantly since the early 1800s - with the emerging 'warehouse prison' typologies - it is time.

- Auto-ethnography
- Historical research
- Other *(Please describe below)
- Action research
- Narrative enquiry
- Biographical research
- Case study
- Phenomenology
- Indigenous research paradigm
- Discourse analysis
- Grounded theory

Please describe other methodologies (1500 character limit)*

The design methodology is 'Research by Design'

Foqué (2010) provides an explanation of the methodology; 'Research by design tries to explore and change the world, and by doing so, tries to gain knowledge about how man analyzes and explores the world and brings it into culture: how we create a man-made world. It does so by creating design applications, relying on technological knowledge and artistic interpretation'.

The objective of the research is to capture and interpret a broad range of beliefs/experiences/perceptions of citizenship and penal design to construct a new body of architectural knowledge. The research incorporates three methods that work in parallel to produce comprehensive research by design methodology:

" Staged Method - Roggema's (2017) proposition for a Research by Design methodological approach has been adopted as the structural mechanism to organise the flow of the research from start to end. The stages are; Pre-Design (data + interpretation), Design (synthesis, critique, design) and, Post-Design (critique, design, thesis)

" Interpretive Research Methods- the research will use qualitative research methods to develop a model which will inform designers of prisons on the recognition of citizenship for environments of incarceration. This is achieved by engaging with a mixture of methods that include; semi-structured interviews, a card sort technique, design workshops, and a 'citizen' critique of the research design outputs.

" Research by Design Methods - This method utilises design hypotheses in Stage 1, proposition in Stage 2, and artefacts in Stage 3. Foqué indicates; Research by Design seeks to; 'gain knowledge about how man analyses and explores the world and brings it into culture: how we create a man-made world. It does so by creating design applications, relying on technical knowledge and artistic expression' (Foqué 2010)

Section 2: Qualitative methods*

- Participants observation
- Covert observation
- Life story or oral history
- Focus groups
- Structured interviews
- Semi-structured interviews
- Unstructured interviews
- Other * (Please describe below)
- On-line research
- Psychological testing/assessment
- Verbal protocol
- Journaling
- Artifact analysis
- Document/Policy analysis
- Access to records
- Audio/video recording

Please describe how interviews will be conducted, including how many participants will be involved (from each participant group if there is more than one group/cohort), the amount of time required of participants for this, whether it will be recorded, and any other information applicable*

Interviews can be divided into three stakeholder groups. Inmates, Staff, and external community member. Interviews with Inmates and Staff are subject to a separate Ethics Application lodged with Corrective Services NSW Ethics Committee (next meeting 24 May 2018). Interviews with all participants will be conducted in the same way regardless of whether they are internal or external to the correctional centre. The following sets out the details of the interviews:

Correctional Centre interviews (subject to CSNSW ethics approval May 24) - three correctional centres - 6 inmates and 6 staff from each centre interviewed individually. Total 36 people. Time for each interview - 45mins. The interviews will be recorded. A card-sort activity where participants can select images from cards to better express their views will be employed as part of the interview. These images are in categories of 'social scenes', 'institutional images', 'place images', and 'material images'. A selection was included in the CSNSW ethics approval.

Separate to the CSNSW Ethics submission, this submission is for the eight external community member organisations have been approached to seek their interest in being part of the research (initial approach to begin the conversation). At this stage, two have responded in the first couple of days. It is not possible to be accurate on how many participants will be involved in the interviews, but we can budget on at least one person per organisation. Some will offer more participants and this is fine as I have approached the organisation rather than random individuals. It is expected that there will be a minimum of eight participants and a maximum of 15. The following organisations have been approached:

- a. NSW Justice - Victims Services
- b. Justice Action
- c. Community Restorative Centre
- d. Shine for Kids
- e. The Jigsaw Group
- f. Public Service Association
- g. Ombudsman NSW
- h. Inspector of custodial services

Who do you think will benefit from this research? (1500 character limit)*

Government corrections agencies. They will benefit from having access to socially inclusive design research. NGOs and other groups that have involvement with inmates leaving prison. The research affords them the opportunity to input their experience into the design.
The public. The research methods provide an opportunity for the broader community to have a role in determining the social attributes of prison design.

Please provide a brief description of the significance of your research (approximately 100 words) (1500 character limit)*

The significance of this project is that it allows for new knowledge in prison design to be developed independent of the existing parameters of design, construct, and operate models of prison procurement. It is also an opportunity to investigate the social relationship with prison design and 'punishment' uncoupled from the broader social discourse dictated by the media. It uniquely allows for a socially inclusive perspective that is gained equally from within and outside of the system.

Please save and continue to the next page

Literature review & references

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar. For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

Please give a brief literature review (no more than 500 words). The aim is to explain how your research fits into the context of other research in the area ([REF NS 1.1\(c\)](#)) (1500 character limit)

Please note that you cannot paste links into the online form

The research being design based, and it placing citizenship central to the research questions, positions it external to much of the literature dealing with prison design or citizenship. There is significant literature addressing individual aspects of prison environments, prisoners and citizenship, punishment and the 'social contract', 'historical', and 'design'. My research will draw these literature fields together and apply a design methodology to form a new, citizen responsive understanding of the prison as architecture.
In a design context, the more recent literature looks at penal environments in the context of 'environment/ rehabilitation', 'environment/normalisation', or 'historical/environments', but not in the context of the design of the prison environments and its influence on the individual's lifetime role as a citizen, rather than the temporary role of the inmate. My research is unique in that it investigates, and builds design knowledge by making the connection between existing prison design practices, social contract theory, and public architecture.

Please list the references only used in the literature review and cited in your application

NOTE: Do not include references you have not used in this application (1500 character limit)

The bibliography relating to the above does not fit the word limit and is attached to the submission. The references are referred to as categories of: 'prison environment', 'Punishment and/or social contract', 'Design as rehabilitation or normalisation', 'Historical' and 'Design Practice and Design Research'.

Please save and continue to the next page

Methods and methodologies

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar. For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

In order to consider your research, the HREC will need to know what it will involve for your participants ([REF NS 3.1](#))

What kinds of methods and methodologies will you use in your research? (More than one box may be checked)*

- Quantitative
 Qualitative

Please save and continue to the next page

Qualitative

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar. For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

What qualitative methodology and methods will be using in this research?

Section 1: Qualitative methodology*

Please describe how audio/video recording will be used in the research, including how many participants will be involved (from each participant group if there is more than one group/cohort), the amount of time required of participants for this, whether it will be recorded, and any other information applicable (1500 character limit)*

Audio is used for recording all participant interviews and will be transcribed to inform the design proposals in the second stage of the research.

Please save and continue to the next page

Section 6: Research participants/subjects part 1

Participant involvement

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar. For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

What time commitment will the research involve for your participants?

NOTE: This information must be included in any information to participants
(1500 character limit)*

Correctional Centre participant (staff and inmate) commitment:
Stage 1. 45min individual interview
Stage 2. 1.5hr inmate design workshop
1.5hr staff design workshop
Stage 3. 1.5hr inmate and staff design critique

External community member organisation commitment:
Stage 1. 1hr individual interview
Stage 2. 2hr group design workshop
Stage 3. 2hr whole cohort design critique

In what location will the research/data collection take place?

NOTE: This information must be included in any information to participants
(1500 character limit)*

Junee Correctional Centre
Long Bay Correctional Centre
South Coast Correctional Centre

External community member organisation commitment:
Stage 1. at the organisation's premises
Stage 2. at UTS Designing Out Crime office
Stage 3. at UTS Designing Out Crime office

What travel, if any, does the research involve for your participants?

NOTE: This information must be included in any information to participants
(1500 character limit)*

Nil for Correctional Centres.
Travel to UTS Designing Out Crime office for the individuals of the community member organisations. Most are located in Sydney.

Please include any additional information relating to participants that you think relevant

NOTE: This information must be included in any information to participants
(1500 character limit)*

N/A

Describe and justify any benefit, payment or compensation the participants will receive. For research being conducted with Aboriginal and Torres Strait Islander People, the described benefits from research should have been discussed with and agreed to by the Aboriginal or Torres Strait Islander research stakeholders. (REF NS 2.1) and 4.7.8 & 4.7.9)
(1500 character limit)*

There is no benefit being offered

Please save and continue to the next page

Recruitment of participants

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar. For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

In line with the National Statement, the definition of participants includes not only those humans who are the primary focus of the research but also those who will be affected by the research. The HREC regards the principle of respect for persons as of paramount importance. ([REF NS 1.1 \(d\)](#), [1.6-1.9](#), [1.10](#), [2.1](#)).

How will you initially select and contact your participants? More than one box may be checked, if appropriate*

- Advertisement/flyer
- Email
- Telephone
- Internet
- Organisation
- Personal contact
- Letter
- Other contact method to be used

Outline how you will obtain participants' contact details and what your recruitment process will be (1500 character limit)*

Contact with inmates and staff are been detailed in the CSNSW Ethics submission. Broadly, contact is made through the Governor of the three correctional centres, Junee, Long Bay, and South Coast.
Emails inquiring into external community member organisations interest in participation have been sent to their generic contact email (see attachment). Recruitment of individuals within these organisations will be part of the initial meeting with the organisation.

Please describe your recruitment plan/strategy

Similar to above

How many participants do you intend to recruit? (If you are intending to recruit different groups of participants, please answer all relevant questions for each group, e.g. control group, test group, etc) (1500 character limit)*

up to 18 inmates and 18 staff.
up to 15 external community member individuals
53 in total.

Explain how and why you have chosen this number (If the research is quantitative, explain the power calculations; if the research is qualitative, explain why the proposed number is likely to result in adequate data) (1500 character limit)*

In terms of selection of the size of the sample, consideration has been made to what is required to get reliable knowledge that reflect a range of perspectives. It is also important in this research project that the artefacts developed to respond to the inputs from staff, inmates, and external individuals - in this way, there is some initial utility in having a manageable group where this can be meaningfully done. 6 participants is a workable number in terms of not extending the demands on CSNSW, it is also a reasonable size for design workshops and group critique activity within the prison environment.

External community member organisations have been selected for their spread knowledge and involvement with correctional centres, inmates and staff. In terms of selection of the size of the sample, consideration has been made to what is required to get reliable knowledge that reflects a range of perspectives across the organisations with involvement in the penal environment. In total there will be up to 15 participants which are similar to a small design studio and a reasonable size for design workshops and meaningful group critique activity.

Describe your inclusion and exclusion criteria for participants (1500 character limit)*

Exclusion of internal participants is detailed in the CSNSW Ethics submission. Primarily, exclusion relates to inmates that may exhibit problematic mental or physical behaviour towards the researcher.
There are no inclusion or exclusion criteria for the community member participants.

Please save and continue to the next page

Consent

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar.
For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

Will you be obtaining written consent?*

- Yes
- No

Please provide sample documents in attachments list at the end of the application form
Please use the following HREC templates when creating an information sheet and consent form: [HREC templates](#)

Do you believe there will be any special issues relating to consent in your research? (REF NS 1.13, 2.2, 2.3, Chapter 4)*

- Yes
- No

Please describe what special issues may be related to consent in your research (2000 character limit)*

There will be issues associated with consent from inmates and staff. These are addressed in the CSNSW Ethics submission. The following is an extract from the document, 'The researcher, Kevin Bradley will explain the project, including its risks and benefits, and detail the process of providing informed consent. Research Information sheets will be distributed to inform potential participants about the details of the research project. These are the 'Research Project Information Sheet - Inmate' and 'Research Project Information Sheet - Staff' (both attached to the submission). Inmate information sheets will be read aloud with discussion time given to ask questions about the project. Once participants have volunteered to participate, the researcher will provide individuals with information at the beginning of the interviews and the group sessions. He will answer questions and explain what the study involves. Following this, the researcher will guide the participant through the activities involved, emphasising the fact that they can stop, postpone or withdraw from the study at any time without consequences.'

For community member participants, the same process for consent applied in the correctional centres will be followed.

Are the participants able to consent fully? (REF NS Chapter 2, 4.4, 4.5)*

- Yes
 No

Please save and continue to the next page

Limited disclosure

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar. For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

Does this research involve limited disclosure to participants? (REF NS 2.3)*

- Yes
 No

Please save and continue to the next page

Vulnerable populations

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar. For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

Indicate if your research will involve the following vulnerable populations (as per the National Statement) other than as incidental participants (i.e. they are not included in the design of the project but may be participants) (REF NS Chapter 4)

- Women who are pregnant and the human foetus
- Children and young people
- People in dependent or unequal relationships
- People highly dependent upon medical care who may be unable to give consent
- People with a cognitive impairment, an intellectual disability or a mental illness
- People who may be involved in illegal activities
- People who are incarcerated
- Aboriginal and Torres Strait Islander Peoples
- People in other countries
- None of the above

Describe how you will respect the ethical considerations specific to your participants, in accordance with [Chapter 4](#) of the National Statement (1500 character limit)*

Prisoners are a vulnerable community and as such incur the risk of being negatively affected by research at different stages. They are exposed to the risk of feeling misled or experiencing discomfort from not having enough clarity of what the research is about and what the consequences of their participation could/would be. Prisoners may feel uncomfortable about giving consent to participate, but because of the imbalance of power between prisoners and those in authority such as uniformed staff, they may feel pressure to do so. Vulnerable communities are also at risk of being negatively affected by the results of research studies if the data has not been appropriately analysed. The strategy to minimise this risk in the project involves presenting preliminary findings to participants and getting their feedback to confirm that the results truly represent the views of participants.

Any participants independent relationships are exposed to the risk that their identity may be known and associated with research data. They may feel discomfort in participating in research because their participation may include comments that do not represent their organisation, employer, tutor, landlord etc. in a positive light. Another risk is that because of the dependent relationship they are in, they may feel obliged to participate.

All data collected will be desensitised so individual participants (both prison staff, inmates, and community members) cannot be identified, providing anonymity and reducing the possibility of any repercussions based on their participation in this research and responses.

If your research is being conducted in Australia, does it involve Culturally and Linguistically Diverse (CALD) People?*

- Yes
 No

Do you intend to recruit any members of the Australian Defence Force?*

- Yes
 No

Please save and continue to the next page

Section 7: Research participants/subjects part 2

Risk/harm

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar.
 For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

Risk or harm could be described as damage or hurt to the wellbeing, interests or welfare of an individual, institution or group. Harm could range from physical hurt or damage such as illness or injury, to psychological or emotional hurt or damage, such as embarrassment or distress. Please note that as a researcher, you are not necessarily immune from risk yourself and should give careful consideration to this question ([REF NS 2.1](#)). For help in addressing the risk/harm section please click [here](#).

NOTE:

It is **really** important that you carefully consider all *potential* risks that could occur, even if they seem negligible. Please do **not** provide one-word answers to any of the questions below. Please refer to the guidelines to address risk and harm located on the UTS HREC website titled: [Help for how to address the risk/harm section](#). Describe, as best as you can, any possible risks to research participants, subjects and related groups
NOTE: This information must be included in any information to participants (2000 character limit)*

<p>Crime Disclosure These risks arise from the possible disclosure of offending behaviours, criminal history or specific crimes.</p> <p>Health There are some health risks to the researcher conducting research within the prison environment where there are higher rates of Hepatitis, HIV+ and influenza among the inmate population. Personal safety of the researcher.</p> <p>Anxiety Further risk arises from inmates being a vulnerable community and as such incur the risk of being negatively affected by research at different stages. Firstly, in the recruitment stage, they are exposed to the risk of feeling misled or experiencing discomfort from not having enough clarity of what the research is about and what the consequences of their participation could/would be. Another risk is that the prisoners may feel uncomfortable about giving consent to participate, but because of the imbalance of power between prisoners and those in authority such as uniformed staff, they may feel pressure to do so. Vulnerable communities may experience anxiety arising from the results of research studies if the data has not been appropriately analysed. There are possible risks to all participants regarding anxiety over the safety of data and being identified.</p> <p>Embarrassment There are possible risks to all participants regarding embarrassment caused by a perception of being in, having been in, or associated with corrections environments.</p> <p>Discomfort There are possible risks to all participants in feeling pressured to participate in the research.</p>

How would you categorise the magnitude of potential risk? (e.g. inconvenience, discomfort, harmful, painful)
 Explain why you believe this is so (1500 character limit)*

<p>Crime Disclosure Inmates - possible, but unlikely. The design nature of the research is far removed from conversations about crime. Staff - unlikely. There is no reason a staff member would disclose a crime in design research. Community - unlikely. There is no reason a community member would disclose a crime in design research.</p> <p>Health HIV in correction centres - Low risk. Interviews and workshops will be held in suitable spaces that will negate threatening situations to the researcher or inmates and staff. Assault in correctional centres- Low risk. Interviews and workshops will be held in suitable spaces that will negate threatening situations to the researcher or inmates and staff.</p> <p>Anxiety Power Imbalance: + Possible for inmates. There is a natural power imbalance between the situation of the inmate and the researcher. The inmate is a captive and the information he provides is then handled by the researcher. + Possible for the researcher when interviewing staff. There is literature that speaks of staff holding the power position over the researcher. They are the gatekeepers and can have a say in who the researcher can speak to and what information is available. +Unlikely when associated with the community participants. There is a slight imbalance towards the researcher given the amount of investment to the concept and the participants being new to the project. Data - Possible. it is likely that all participants will be anxious over the security of the research data and whether they could be identified from it.</p> <p>Embarrassment It is possible that participants may experience embarrassment over their situation or previous situations. It is also possible that inmate participants will be embarrassed by their low literacy levels.</p> <p>Discomfort Possible. It is not expected that there will be discomfort experienced in the one on one interviews. This may become more possible in the latter stages of the research that involve groups.</p>
--

How would you categorise the likelihood of risk? (i.e. slight, possible, likely, probable, unavoidable)
 Explain why you believe this is so (1500 characters)*

Crime disclosure - slight
Health - slight
Anxiety - possible
Embarrassment - slight
Discomfort - possible

What strategies will you use to minimise and/or manage the risks? (1500 character limit)*

Crime disclosure
The researcher will observe compliance with the requirements the Disclosure of Crime S316.
Inmates - Inmate participants will be reminded at the beginning of every interview session about the researcher's legal obligation to make a report should the participant disclose involvement in a past or future planned crime.

Health
The researcher has been vaccinated for Hepatitis in the past and will seek medical advice regarding booster immunisation before Stage 1.
Risks to the personal safety of the researcher will be managed by ensuring a CS staff member will be responsible and provide the appropriate security briefings and guidance to the team members at all times they are within a correctional centre.

Anxiety
Presenting findings at each stage to confirm that the results truly represent the views of all participants.
Conducting interviews in a neutral space will assist with being able to offset the imbalance between staff and researcher

Embarrassment
Researcher information sheets will be forwarded to all participants and explained verbally when meeting.

Discomfort
the risk of feeling pressure to participate will be managed by regular, repeated verbal checking with individual participants that they are under no pressure to participate and there will be no repercussions if they elect not to participate.

Discuss likely or possible risk to researchers (including yourself), and your strategies for minimising such risks (1500 character limit)*

Research in a correctional centre will always hold some level of physical risk to the researcher due to the nature of the facility and those within. However, correctional facilities are highly controlled environments, and, taking a quote from one of the correctional centre managers when visiting on a previous project, 'You are more likely to be injured in the pub on a Friday night, than in here. Because we know everyone - and in the pub, you don't'. The risk to the researcher is more likely to be emotional through anxiety. This is more likely to be experienced with the power imbalance between a staff member and researcher and the worry that the data is being influenced. The strategy employed is in the staging of the research over three sites. One or two staff members may express personal views (maybe out of bravado, maybe out of personal dislike of researchers). These views are only part of the larger data set in the first stage and the interpretation into design hypotheses being presented back to the staff group provides the mechanism to offset the individual's power imbalance.

Please save and continue to the next page

Pre-existing relationships

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar.
For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

Are there likely to be any pre-existing relationships with research participants? (e.g. employer/employee, colleague, friend, relation, student/teacher, etc)*

- Yes
 No

Please describe (1500 character limit)*

I am a Senior Research Associate, DIRC Design Innovation Research Centre - previously Designing Out Crime. Since 2012 I have been involved in a number of research projects with NSW Corrective Services. From these projects, there is a professional relationship.
I have also led a design studio for a project at Junee Correctional Centre which is one of the proposed sites for the research. Again, I have developed a professional relationship with staff at the centre.

How might these relationships influence their decision to participate, be affected by the proposed research or create potential ethical conflict? Please describe strategy for dealing with this (1500 character limit)*

The relationship with CSNSW and the privately run Junee is more likely to have a positive influence in that both researcher and organisations have a degree of confidence in both capability, intent, and project delivery.
There is no foreseeable conflict of interest between the existing relationship with CSNSW and Junee, or the future community member participants.

Describe how you will ensure that student assessment, employee security, etc., will not be adversely affected by participation in this research (1500 character limit)*

All data collected will be desensitised so individual participants cannot be identified, providing anonymity and reducing the possibility of any repercussions based on their participation in this research and responses

Will you be recruiting UTS staff and/or students as research participants?*

- Yes
 No

Please save and continue to the next page

External organisations

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar.
For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

Indicate if your research will involve any of the following:*

- Institution
- Organisation
- Community Group
- None of the above

Please describe what type(s) of institution / organisation / community group will be involved and how many will be involved (1500 character limit)*

The following are the institutions/organisations/community groups that have been approached for their interest in the research. Info has been adapted from their web pages.

- a. NSW Justice - Victims Services - Part of Justice NSW. VS promotes victims rights and continuously improve services and support. They provide leadership and collaborate with stakeholders to improve knowledge, law reform and policy development concerning victims of crimes.
- b. Justice Action Group - 2 people - JA is an organisation that represents people locked in Australian prisons and hospitals, defending human rights.
- c. Community Restorative Centre - up to 4 people. The CRC provides a range of services to people involved in the criminal justice system and their families. CRC is the lead provider of specialist throughcare, post-release, and reintegration programs for people transitioning from prison into the community in NSW.
- d. Shine for Kids - 2 people. Shine for Kids supports children, young people and families with relatives in the criminal justice system
- e. The Jigsaw Group - 2 people. Providing board based services for the benefit of offenders, ex-offenders and their families for their future life.
- f. Public Service Association - 2 people. The PSA is the union that represents correctional centre staff.
- g. Ombudsman NSW - 1 person. The NSW Ombudsman is an independent and impartial watchdog. Their job is to make sure that agencies we watch over fulfill their functions properly and improve their delivery of services to the public. They are an independent visitor to correctional facilities.
- h. Inspector of custodial services - 1 person. The Inspector of Custodial Services is appointed to inspect adult correctional facilities and juvenile justice centres, and report to Parliament on the findings of these inspections.
- i. NSW Corrective Services - 18 people - Manage the correctional centres. Employ correctional staff and have care of the prison population.

Was the research generated from within the institution / organisation / community group?*

- Yes
- No

Please save and continue to the next page

External organisation consent

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar.
For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

Have you sought appropriate approval or support from the institution / organisation / community group involved?*

- Yes
- No

Please attach a copy of any letter of approval/agreement at the end of this form

Do you intend to feed the research results back to the institution / organisation / community group?*

- Yes
- No

Please describe how (1500 character limit)*

The research thesis will be made available. The organisations will also be invited to the final design exhibition.

Does this research involve any contracts, including confidentiality agreements? (REF NS 3.2.12, 3.5.6) (Section 2.5 and 4, The Code)*

- Yes
- No

Please save and continue to the next page

Section 8: Data

Data collection

16/05/2018

Page 16 / 22

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar.
For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

The collection, storage and use of data involve important considerations of privacy. When collecting data, researchers should show due sensitivity and respect for persons. It is also important that data be reliable, authentic, and where appropriate, replicable. This section will provide the HREC with information as to how you intend to deal with these issues.
(REF NS 2.2.6(f). 3.2) (Section 2, The Code)

Who will collect the data? (More than one box may be checked) (Section 2, The Code)*

- External contract researcher
- External associate researcher
- External student
- Internal (UTS) academic researcher
- Internal (UTS) research assistant
- Internal (UTS) student
- Research Assistant
- Volunteers
- Other

Will you be attaching a sample of your data recording/measurement instrument(s) to this application (e.g. survey, interview format, etc?)*

- Yes
- No

Please explain why (choose from the drop-down list)*

Still developing

Please give as much information as you can at this point (e.g. outline of questions) (1500 character limit)*

Stage 1 Method - Semi-structured Interviews with a card sort prompt:
45-minute face to face semi-structured interviews are held in Stage 1. Interviews will be audio taped, with the participant's permission, & then transcribed.
A mixture of verbal questions and visual prompts will be used.
The following sample semi-structured interview questions are relevant to this stage and are intended to elicit the individuals perception of their environment and connectivity with society:
" What places in the outside world are meaningful to you?
" Where do you feel most connected socially?
" What type of situation makes you feel connected with others?
" What type of place do you like to spend time with people?
" What's good about that place?
" Is it important that the spaces in the prison reminds you of why you are here?
" Is it important that a prison looks, or gives a sense of, a place of punishment from the outside?
" If you were an architect who was going to design a prison..

Stage 2 Method - Design Workshop:
The researcher returns to the correctional centres after having completed the data analysis of Stage 1 with a series of themed interpreted design hypothesis. The 1.5hr workshop offers the opportunity for all participants as separate groupings to engage in the research process as designers themselves (holders of knowledge) alongside the design researcher.

Stage 3 Method - 'Citizen' critique
This method is employed to test the veracity of the researcher's interpretation of the synthesised design data. The researcher presents the developed design propositions that were synthesised from the workshops to the participant groups. It affords ongoing participant agency in the design research. Data from the citizen critique will be fed into the final curated design propositions, thesis and exhibition.

When will you be able to provide a final copy to the HREC?

NOTE: Final approval is contingent on receipt of questionnaire/instruments/interview schedule

25/05/2018

Please save and continue to the next page

Information database or personal records

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar.
For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

Do your data collection or recruitment methods include access to an information database or personal records?
(Section 95 and 95A, Privacy Act) (REF NS 3.2)

- Yes
- No

Please save and continue to the next page

Data type

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar.
For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

The HREC is required to report on privacy to the Federal and NSW Privacy Commissioners

Indicate the category of data you will be obtaining at the point of data collection (More than one box may be checked):*

- Individually identifiable data
- Re-identifiable data
- Non-identifiable data

How will you ensure that data will be non-identifiable? (1500 character limit)*

All data collected will be desensitised so individual participants cannot be identified, providing anonymity and reducing the possibility of any repercussions based on their participation in this research and responses.

Please save and continue to the next page

Data storage

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar.
For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

Data must be stored and secured for a minimum of 5 years after publication (Some data are required for longer periods of time and the storage will need to take this into account). For further details on retention requirements, refer to the UTS Records Management Policy <http://www.records.uts.edu.au/policies/index.html>
The data should be stored so as to ensure maximum privacy for participants, reliability and retrievability of data.

Indicate the format(s) the data will be stored in (Choose as many categories as applicable)

NOTE: This information must be included in any information to participants

*

- Electronic/digital recording
- Handwritten notes
- Microfilm
- Non-identifiable(anonymous)data
- On-line data storage
- Paper questionnaires/Surveys
- Transcripts of tapes/recordingd
- Video tapes
- Other

Who will have access to the raw data? (Choose as many categories as applicable)

NOTE: This information must be included in any information to participants

*

- UTS academic researcher(s)
- UTS student(s) and supervisors
- External researcher(s)
- Research assistant(s)
- Funding body/organisation
- Partner organisation(s)
- Other

Please save and continue to the next page

Use & publication of data

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar.
For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

How do you intend to use and/or publish the data? (Choose as many categories as applicable)

NOTE: This information must be included in any information to participants

*

- Book
- Client Report
- Conference paper
- Electronic publication
- Media
- Report
- Thesis
- Journal articles
- Other

Please provide details (1500 character limit)*

Design exhibition at UTS

Do you envisage any additional use of data in future research projects?*

- Yes
- No

Please save and continue to the next page

Privacy principles

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar. For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

As a general principle, privacy and confidentiality should be respected at all stages of the research (raw data, analysis, published or archived), and by all those involved in the research (including the researcher, research assistants, administrative assistants, students, interpreters, translators, data processors, members of focus groups, etc.)

Note: Privacy and confidentiality is complicated in NSW because it is governed by a number of separate Acts. From 12 March 2014, the new Australian Privacy Principles (APPs) were introduced to regulate the handling of personal information by Australian government agencies and some private sector organisations.

The privacy fact sheet providing the text of the 13 APP can be accessed [here](#).

The 13 APP apply to all research conducted by staff and students of this University.

Will this research be undertaken in conformity to ALL the Privacy Principles?*

- Yes
- No

Please save and continue to the next page

Privacy & confidentiality

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar. For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

How will you ensure the security of the data? (1500 character limit)*

The researcher will be the only person in the project to have access to raw data which will be desensitised when transcribed and stored in a secure password protected file on a cloud-based server.

How will you protect the confidentiality/privacy of your participants? (1500 character limit)*

The researcher will be the only person in the project to have access to raw data which will be desensitised when transcribed and stored in a secure password protected file on a cloud-based server.

To what extent will you or anyone else be able to identify the research participants from the published or unpublished data? Please describe: (1500 character limit)*

It will be very unlikely that data will be identifiable as the research relies on the aggregation and interpretation of the data to inform the design outcomes.

Please save and continue to the next page

Interpretation/analysis/disposal

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar.
For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

Regardless of whether data collected is qualitative or quantitative, how do you plan to analyse these data into material that is valid and reliable? (Include a brief summary of your Analysis Plan)
(1500 character limit)*

Stage 1
The individual data is collected and themed in their relevant cohorts (eg: aggregate individual inmate data from the interviews to the inmate group interpretation of the data). The interpretive methods include theming of the interview data.
Stage 2
The data generated from the group design workshops (inmate, staff, community member) will be captured and analysed through interpretive means to establish a number design proposals taken to Stage 3.
Stage 3
The data generated from the design critique in this stage will be analysed through interpretive methods to inform the final design proposal, exhibition and thesis.

Will the data be archived or destroyed? *

- Archived
 Destroyed

Where will the data be archived, who will have access to it, and will there be any conditions attached?
(1500 character limit)*

In a secure password protected file on a cloud-based server

Please save and continue to the next page

Section 9: Additional information

Other ethical issues

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar.
For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

If there are any additional ethical issues which you do not believe have been covered by this form, please explain them for the HREC: (1500 character limit)*

Nil

Please save and continue to the next page

Section 10: Attachments

Attachments

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar.
For further information and help in completing your application go to [Staff Connect](#)

I have attached the following supporting documents

Doctoral or Masters assessment*

- Yes
 N/A

Budget page from funding application*

- Yes
 N/A

Informed consent form(s)*

- Yes
 N/A

Participant Information Sheet(s)*

- Yes
 No

Evidence of approval from external institution, organisation or community group*

- Yes
 N/A

Explanations of any technical terms used*

- Yes
 N/A

Standard Operating Procedures*

- Yes
 No

Please explain why any of the above items have not been attached (either softcopy/hardcopy) and when they will be provided (1500 character limit)*

There is no budget for this research. All travel is within NSW. Exhibition funding cannot be determined at this stage. Informed consent forms for inmates and staff are attached but not for community participants. These will be the same as the informed consent forms for staff. Approvals from external organisations will be provided in one submission (two have already expressed interest) No technical terms are being used. The research does not rely on standardised operating procedures above those specified by CSNSW which are part of the ethics submission to them and due on 24th May.

NOTE: If you are only attaching a hardcopy of any attachments relating to this application, you must still click on 'Add New Document' on the right hand side of the table.

If possible, please consolidate all attachments into one PDF

How to attach

1. Click on "Add New Document"
2. Enter a title in the "Document description" field
3. Click on the OK button
4. Click on SOFT COPY icon
5. Follow the instructions in the upload dialog box

To add a reference to a hard copy document:

1. Click on "Add New Document"
2. Enter a title in the "Document Description" field
3. Tick check box for "Hard Copy"
4. Enter details in the "Reference (Document Title)" field
5. Click on the OK button

Please use the following HREC templates when creating an information sheet and consent form: [HREC templates](#)

Documents attached to this application:*

Description	Reference	Soft copy	Hard copy
ETH18-2448 : Citizen prison: Investigation into a citizen-centred approach to prison design attachments	ETH18-2448 - Citizen prison- Investigation into a citizen-centred approach to prison design ATTACHMENTS.pdf	✓	

Please read the submission instructions carefully at the end of this application form.
Please save and continue to the next page

Declaration

Declaration

I declare that the information I have given above is true and that this research does not contravene the National Statement on Ethical Conduct in Human Research, the Australian Code for the Responsible Conduct of Research, and relevant UTS policy and guidelines relating to the safe and ethical conduct of research.

I also declare that I will respect the personality, rights, wishes, beliefs, consent and freedom of the individual participant in the conduct of my research and that I will notify the UTS Human Research Ethics Committee of any ethically relevant variation in this research.

In signing this declaration, I guarantee that this form has been distributed to each member of the research team, and they have agreed to abide by the principles and processes of the research as outlined in this application.

To signoff the ethics application click on your name below and accept.

Declaration Signoff*

1	Full Name	Mr Michael Er
	Position	Chief Investigator
	Declaration signed?	No
	Signoff Date	
2	Full Name	Mr Kevin Bradley
	Position	5Research Student
	Declaration signed?	Yes
	Signoff Date	16/05/2018

You can save your application at any time by clicking on the save button on the left hand side in the toolbar. Further examples and information to help you successfully complete your application can be found [here](#)

Appendix B
Research Management – Participant Information Sheets

PARTICIPANT INFORMATION SHEET

ETH18-2448 : Citizen prison: Investigation into a citizen-centred approach to prison design

WHO IS DOING THE RESEARCH?

My name is Kevin Bradley and I am a student at UTS. My principle supervisor is Dr Michael Er – (02)

WHAT IS THIS RESEARCH ABOUT?

This research seeks to determine how the design of prisons could maintain a sense of citizenship and corresponding connection with society. The research employs design methods to achieve this goal and will result in an architectural exhibition of artefacts arising from the research.

I want to speak with you about prisons in terms of how they connect with society, specifically with regards to their built environment and how this influences the inmate returning to society.

WHY HAVE I BEEN ASKED?

You have been invited to participate in this study because you have experience and views that are valuable to the research investigation in the relationship between prison design and citizenship. Your contact details were obtained via established industry knowledge, online searches, and conversations with other organisations similar to yours.

IF I SAY YES, WHAT WILL IT INVOLVE?

You will be invited to be involved as a community organisation member (individual or organisation) in the research in three stages over the next 18 months. Each stage includes inmate, staff, and community member involvement. It is not necessary that you are involved in each stage, but it would be great if you were. At each stage I will confirm that you are willing to be part of the research and will ask you to sign a consent form each time we meet. You are able to opt out or opt in to any of the stages. The stages are:

Stage 1 – Getting information (individual meeting) – 45 mins

- Semi-structured interview.
- complete an exercise called a 'card sort' where there are cards with images that you can select. You can select as many as you like to express your ideas. The selection of the cards will be part of the conversation which will be recorded. The card selection will be photographed for the research record and exhibition at the end of the research. No person will be identifiable without consent.

Stage 2 – Confirming the information and doing a design workshop (group meeting) – 1.5hr

- I will present the ideas that came out of the first stage to the group
- You will have the opportunity to discuss these ideas and to be able to design in a workshop with other community participants if practicable
- I will collect all this material from the workshop and confirm a number of design ideas at the end of the workshop

Stage 3 – Finalising the design directions (inmate and staff group meeting) – 1.5hr

- I will present design interpretations of all participating groups from the first two stages.
- You will have an opportunity to talk about all the designs and provide more information for the research
- At the end of this stage there will be an exhibition of the final designs that is informed by the research with the people inside, and outside of prison

ARE THERE ANY RISKS/INCONVENIENCE?

There are very few, if any risks because the research has been carefully designed. All data gathered is confidential and will be de-identified including organisation or participants names.

DO I HAVE TO SAY YES?

Participation in this study is voluntary. It is completely up to you whether or not you decide to take part at any point in time.

WHAT WILL HAPPEN IF I SAY NO?

If you decide not to participate, it will not affect your relationship with the researchers or the University of Technology Sydney. If you wish to withdraw from the study once it has started, you can do so at any time without having to give a reason, by contacting Michael Er (Michael.er@uts.edu.au) or Kevin Bradley (kevin.bradley@student.uts.edu.au).

If you decide to leave the research project, we will not collect additional personal information from you, although personal information already collected will be retained to ensure that the results of the research project can be measured properly and to comply with law. You should be aware that data collected up to the time you withdraw will form part of the research project results.

CONFIDENTIALITY

By signing the consent form you consent to the research team collecting and using personal information about you for the research project. All this information will be treated confidentially. All information will be de-identified.

We plan to discuss/publish the results in my PhD thesis and academic publications/conferences. It will also be used to assist future prison design practice. Photographs will be used for my PhD thesis and academic publications/conferences. In any publication, information will be provided in such a way that you cannot be identified.

WHAT IF I HAVE CONCERNS OR A COMPLAINT?

If you have concerns about the research that you think I or my supervisor can help you with, please feel free to contact Michael Er (Michael.er@uts.edu.au) or Kevin Bradley (kevin.bradley@student.uts.edu.au). If you don't want to talk to anyone involved in the project you can contact: the Acting Deputy Vice-Chancellor (Research): Professor Charles Rice at Charles.rice@uts.edu.au

You will be given a copy of this form to keep.

NOTE:

This study has been approved by the University of Technology Sydney Human Research Ethics Committee [UTS HREC]. If you have any concerns or complaints about any aspect of the conduct of this research, please contact the Ethics Secretariat on ph.: +61 2 9514 2478 or email: Research.Ethics@uts.edu.au, and quote the UTS HREC reference number. Any matter raised will be treated confidentially, investigated and you will be informed of the outcome.

Appendix C

International Committee of the Red Cross Support Letter

From: Catherine Deman <cdeman@icrc.org>
Date: 29 July 2016 at 8:59:41 PM AEST
To: Rohan Lulham <Rohan.Lulham@uts.edu.au>
Cc: Mary Angela Murphy <mmurphy@icrc.org>
Subject: Fw: Proposal for PhD Research in Correctional Architecture

Dear Rohan,

Please find hereafter a letter of support.

Graduate Research Program
Graduate Research School
University of Technology, Sydney
Level 7, Tower Building 1
15 Broadway Ultimo NSW 2007

The International Committee of the Red Cross (ICRC) has a long history of promoting humanitarian principles in prison contexts internationally and in recent years its advice has been increasingly sought when new prisons are planned. The ICRC Deprived of Liberty Unit is currently working on a new publication on the planning and design of prisons.

Mr Keven Bradley, a practicing Architect with experience in correctional design, is part of a team from the University of Technology, Sydney which is drafting a chapter for the ICRC publication. It is with interest that we learnt of his proposed PhD research "Beyond the Walls: The inclusion of meaning in correctional facility design as a way to construct humane environments and connect with community".

Our experience shows that there is a growing need internationally for guidance on how to design prisons in a way that supports human and societal needs. The intended focus of Mr Bradley's research seems likely to expand the body of evidence which shows that prisons should be built with the full range of human needs in mind. We support the intent of the research, and as a stakeholder in the field will follow with interest the development of this study.

Catherine Deman
Head of Unit Persons Deprived of Liberty

International Committee of the Red Cross (ICRC)

19 Avenue de la Paix - 1202 Geneva
+41 (0)22 730 3477

Intranet: <http://intranet.gva.icrc.priv/structure/operations/detentionforum/index.jsp>
Extranet: <http://www.icrc.org/eng/what-we-do/visiting-detainees/index.jsp>

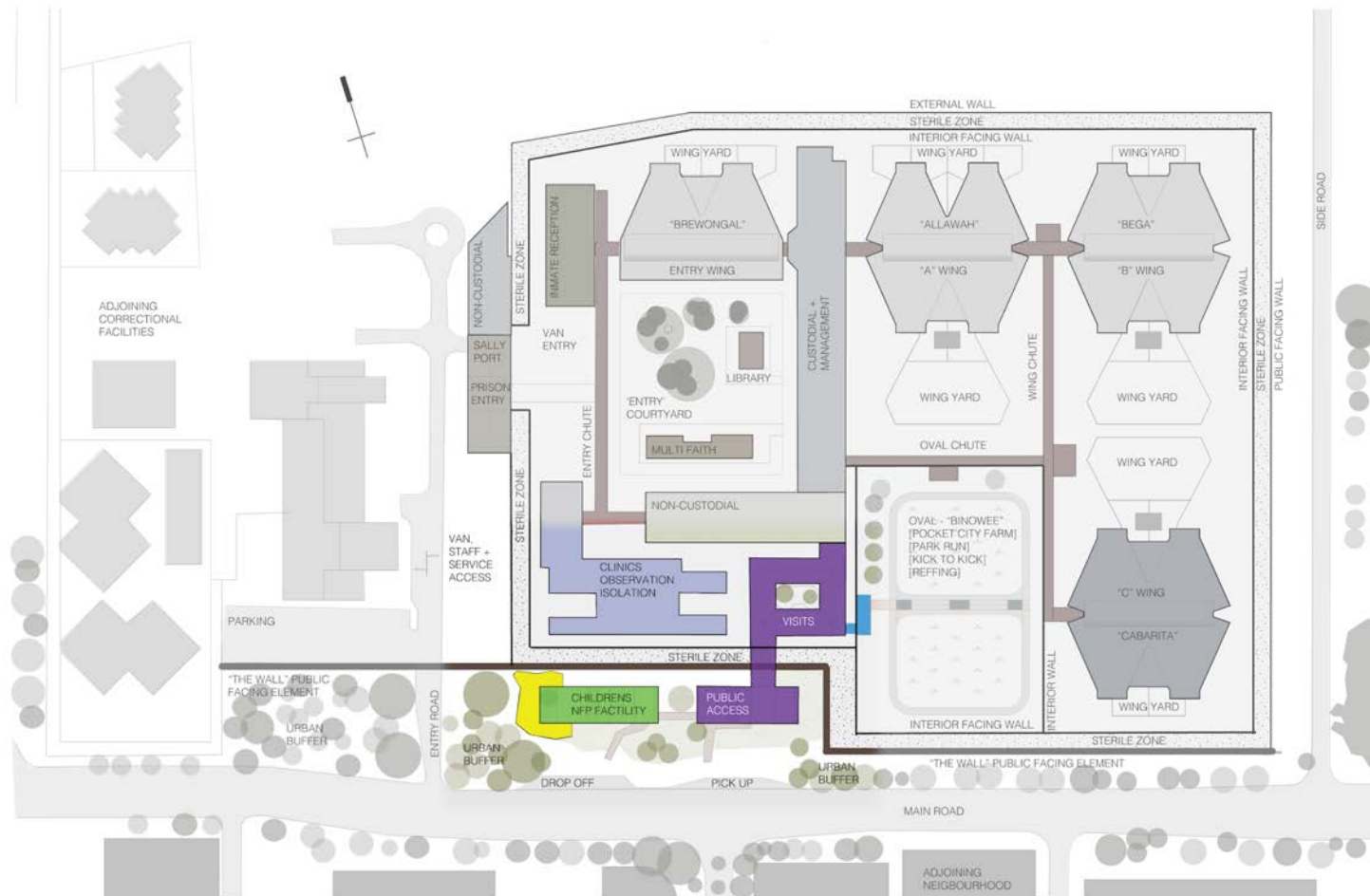
Forwarded by Catherine Deman/DP, BPOE, DET/GVA/ICRC on 30.07.2016 12:58

Appendix D

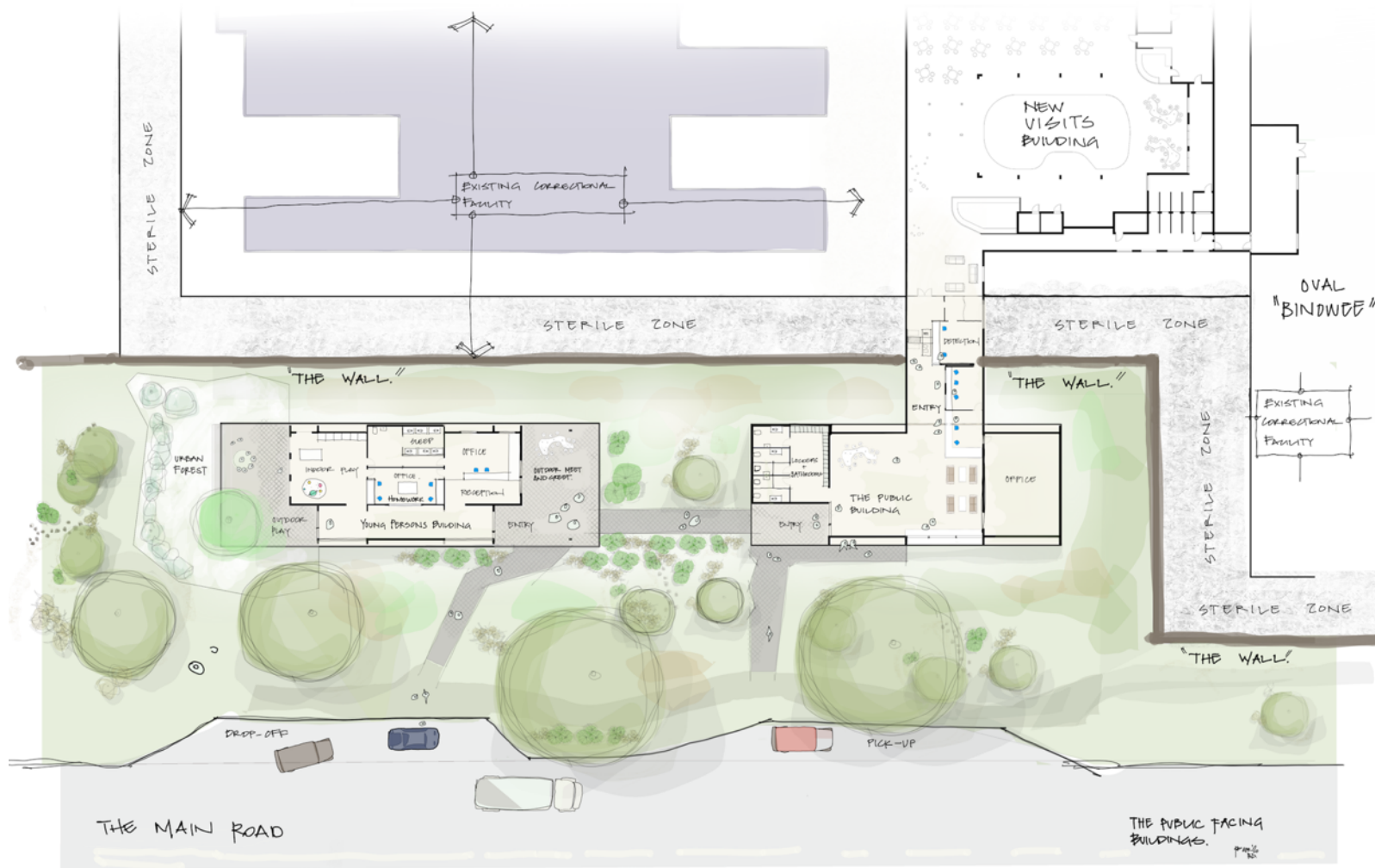
Design Oriented Scenario Sketches. Working + Complete

The following collection of design sketches were produced to evoke future worlds from the research findings. Some are working sketches, others are complete.

The Public Entry and Visits



Public Entry and Visits. Orientation



Public entry sketch plan.



Early concept design scenario for the public entry building.



Public entry building sketch



Visits reception sketch

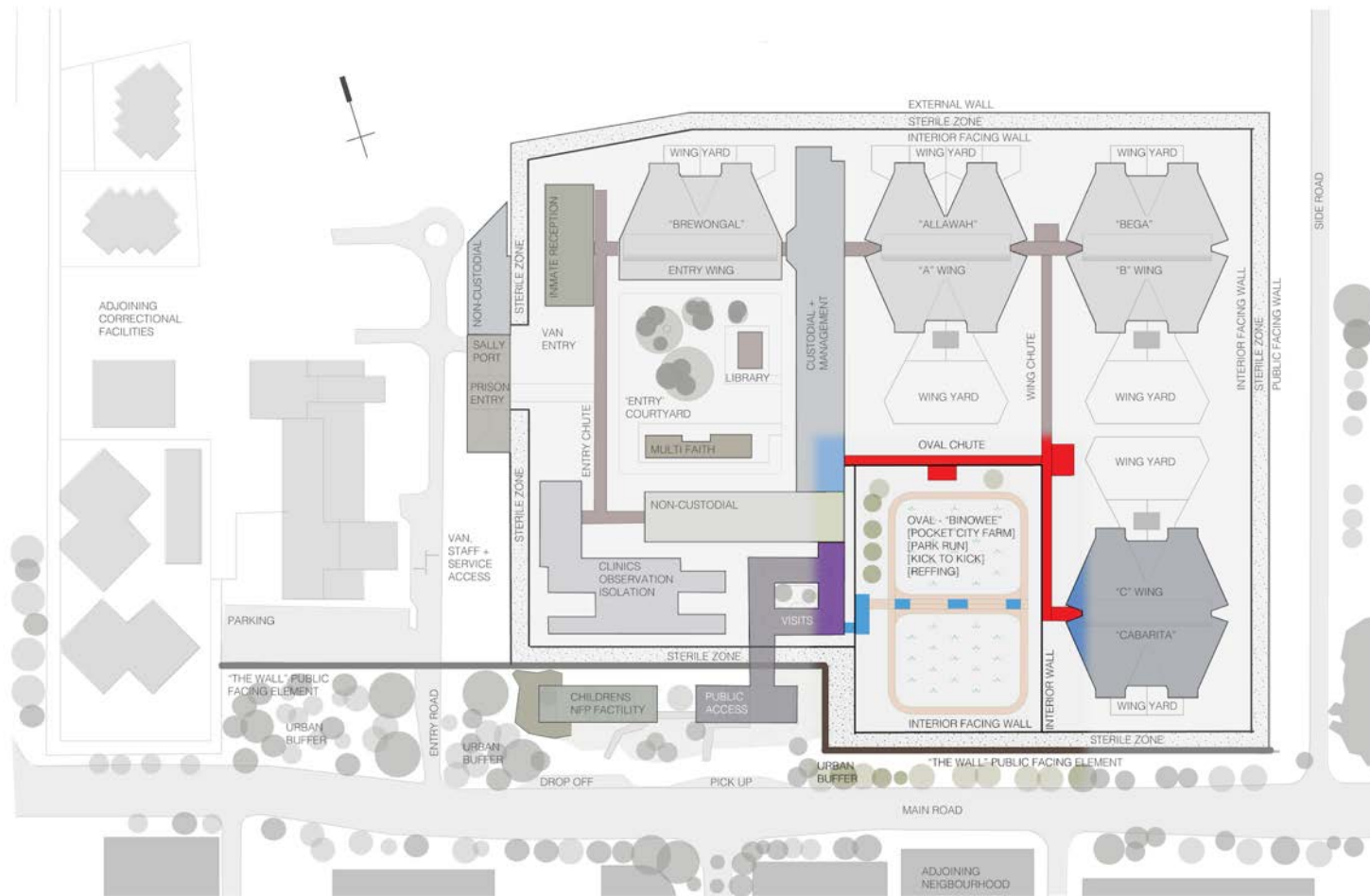


Visits open courtyard sketch

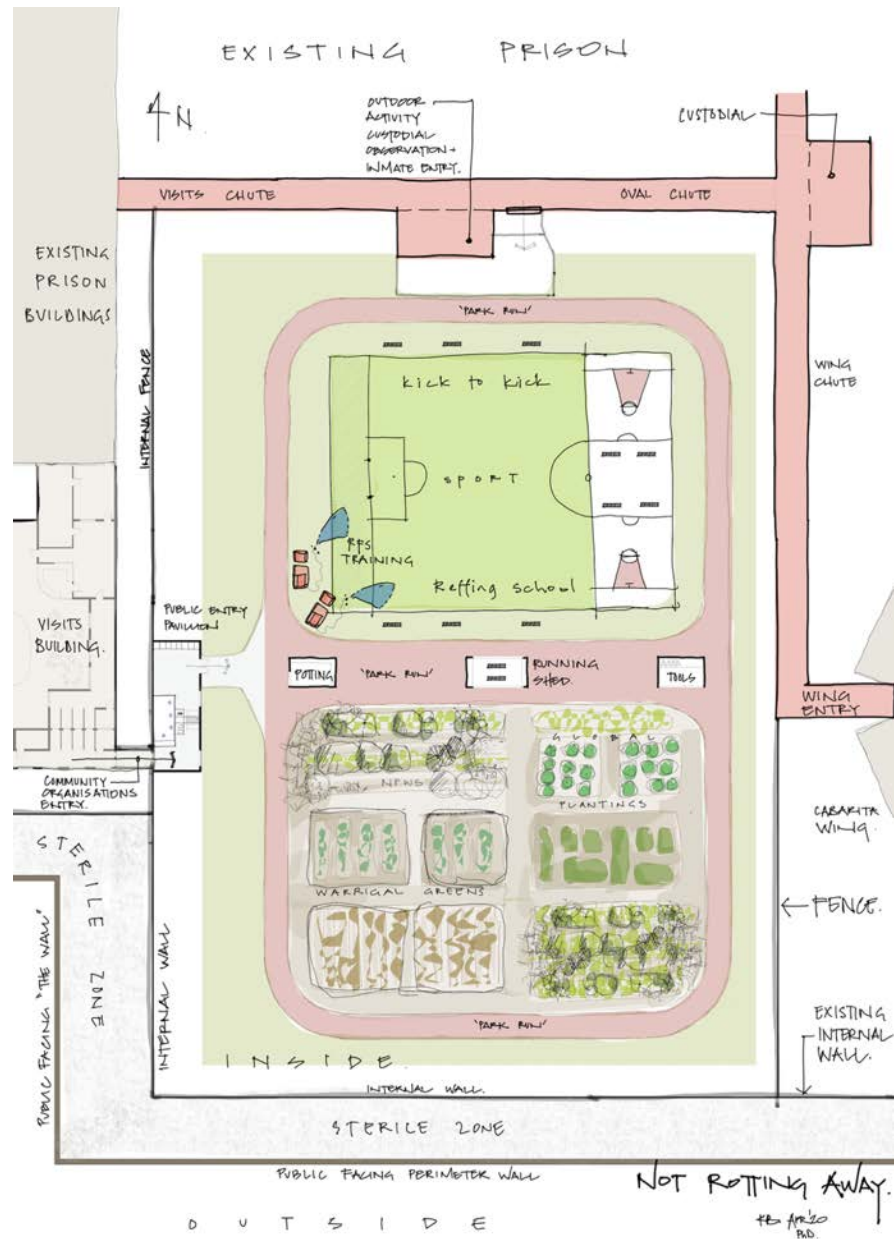


Conversations and food. Visits sketch

Being Productive



Being productive - Orientation sketch plan



Not rotting away – sketch plan



Being productive sketch

Prison as a Contemporary Symbol of Civic Duty



Custodial entry sketch



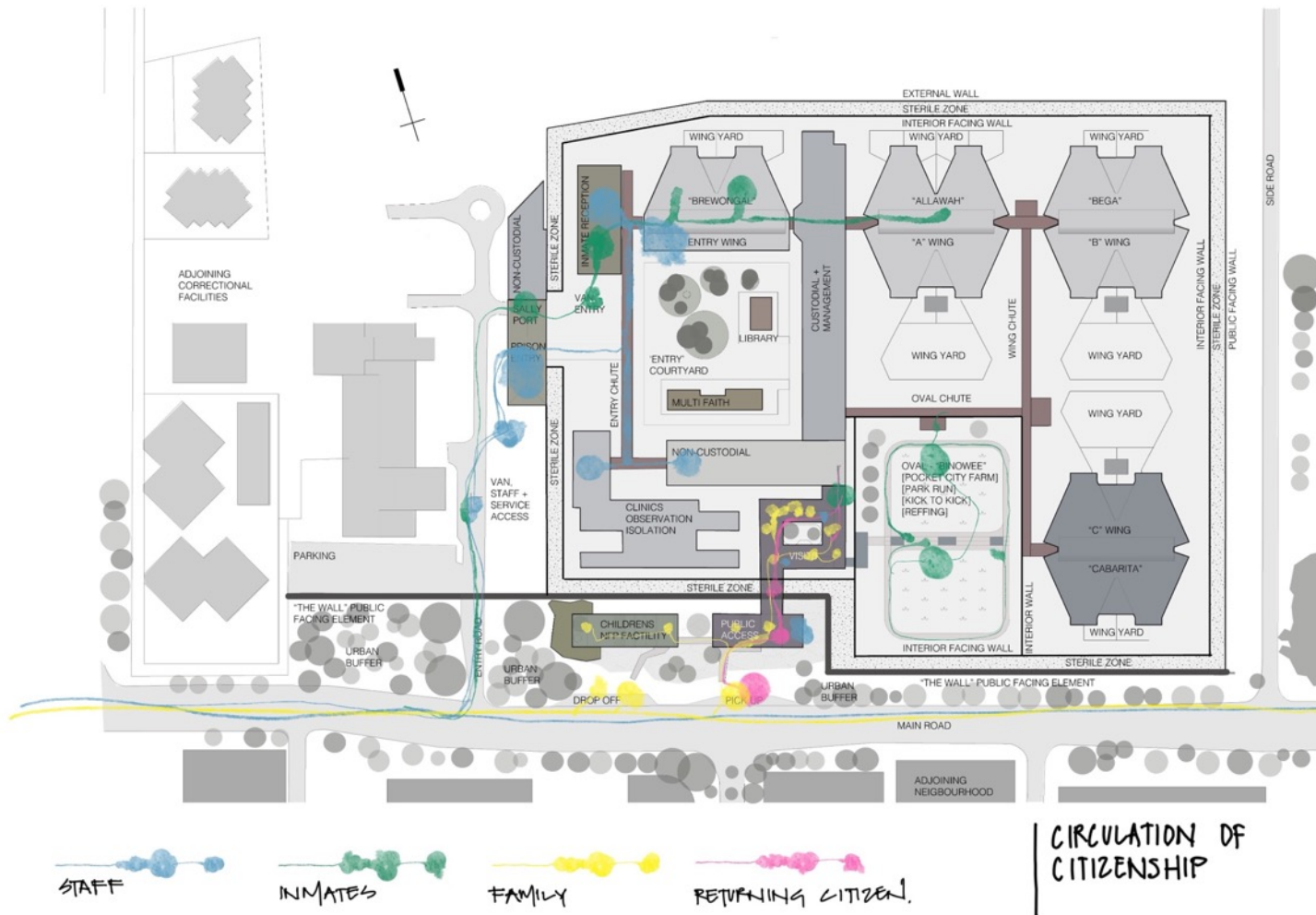
SOCIAL
PRESENCE.
APR '20.

Public building aesthetic sketch

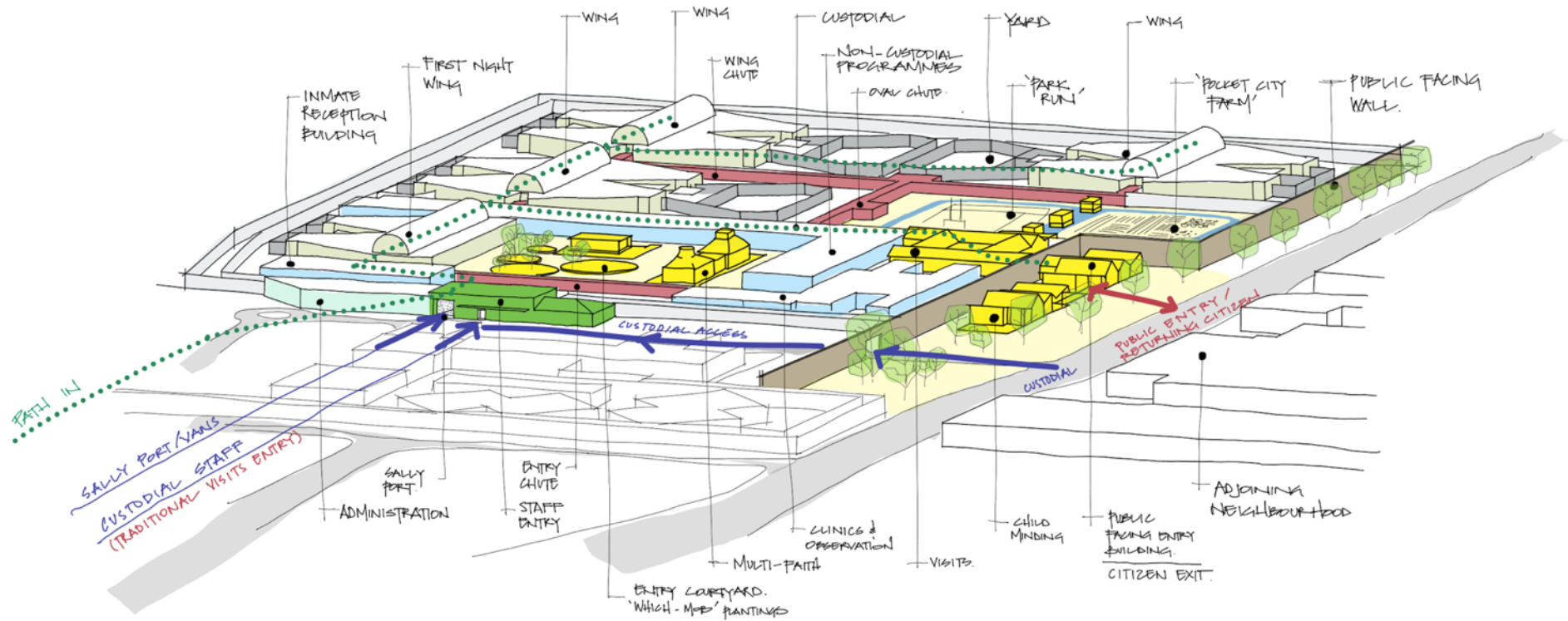
A Way in and a Path Out



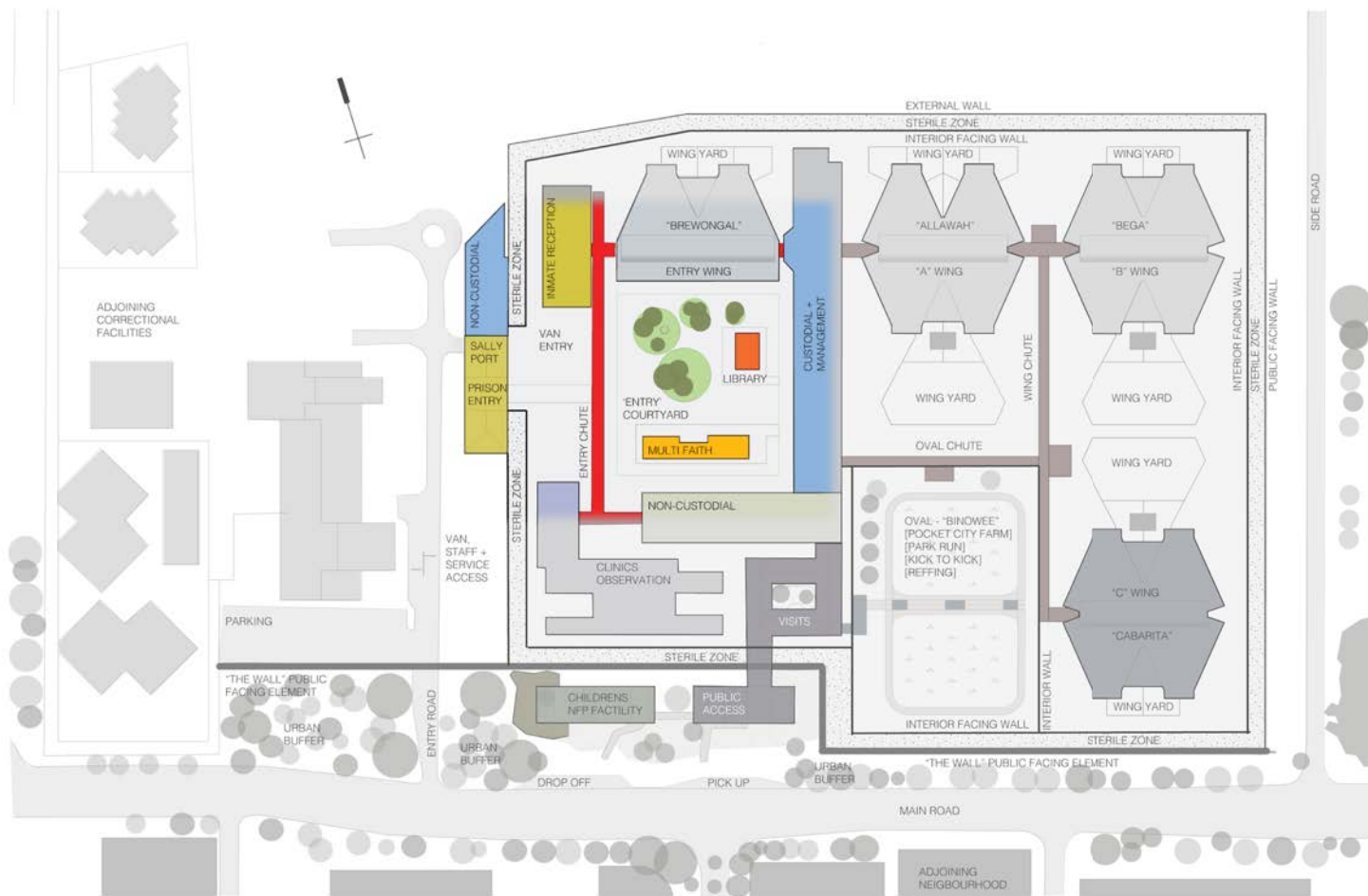
Flow of people sketch. Existing condition.



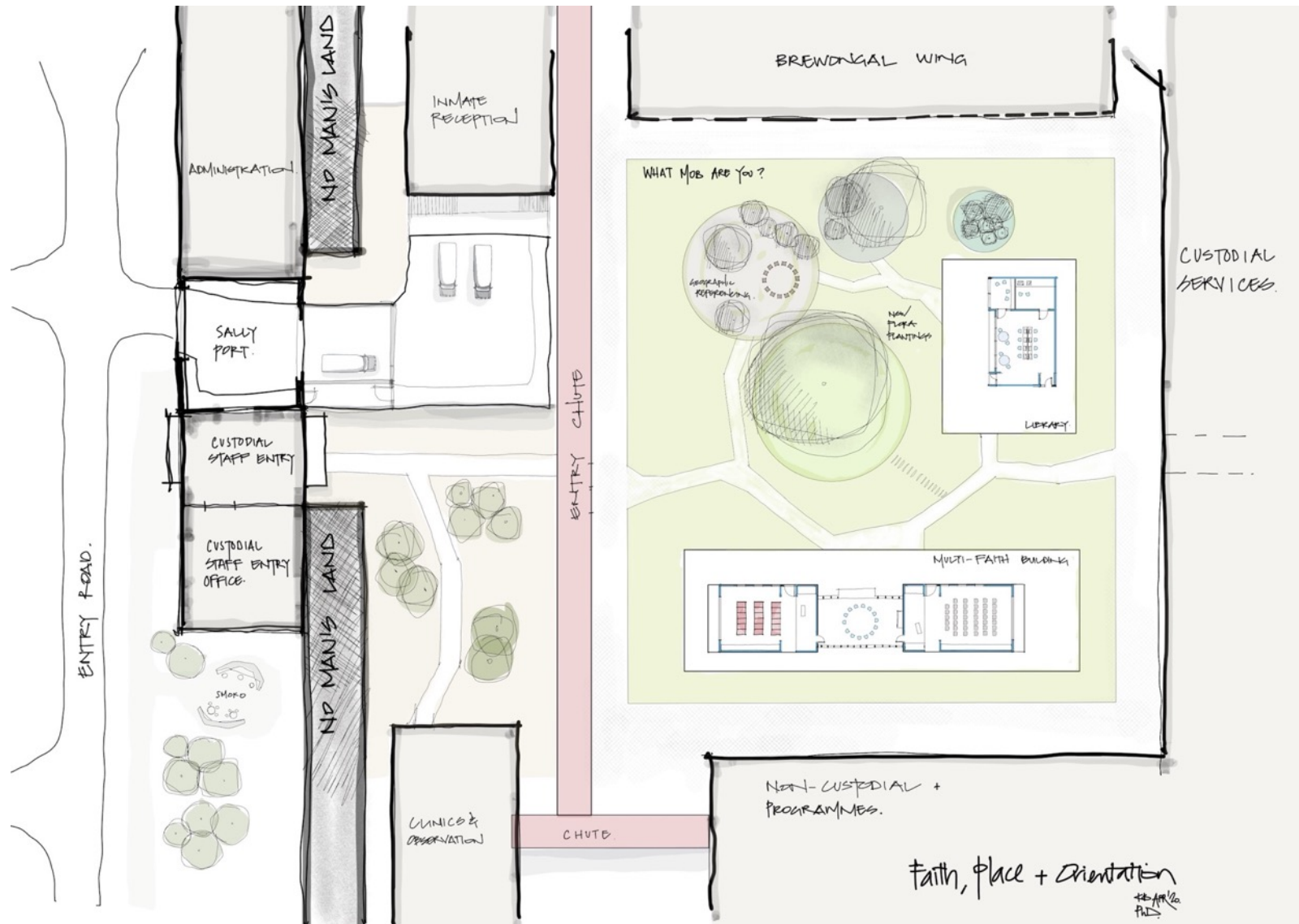
Flow of people sketch. Proposed outcome sketch. The returning 'citizen'.



A path in and a way out – organisation axo sketch



Custodial Entry. Finding your way - 'First night + Faith'.

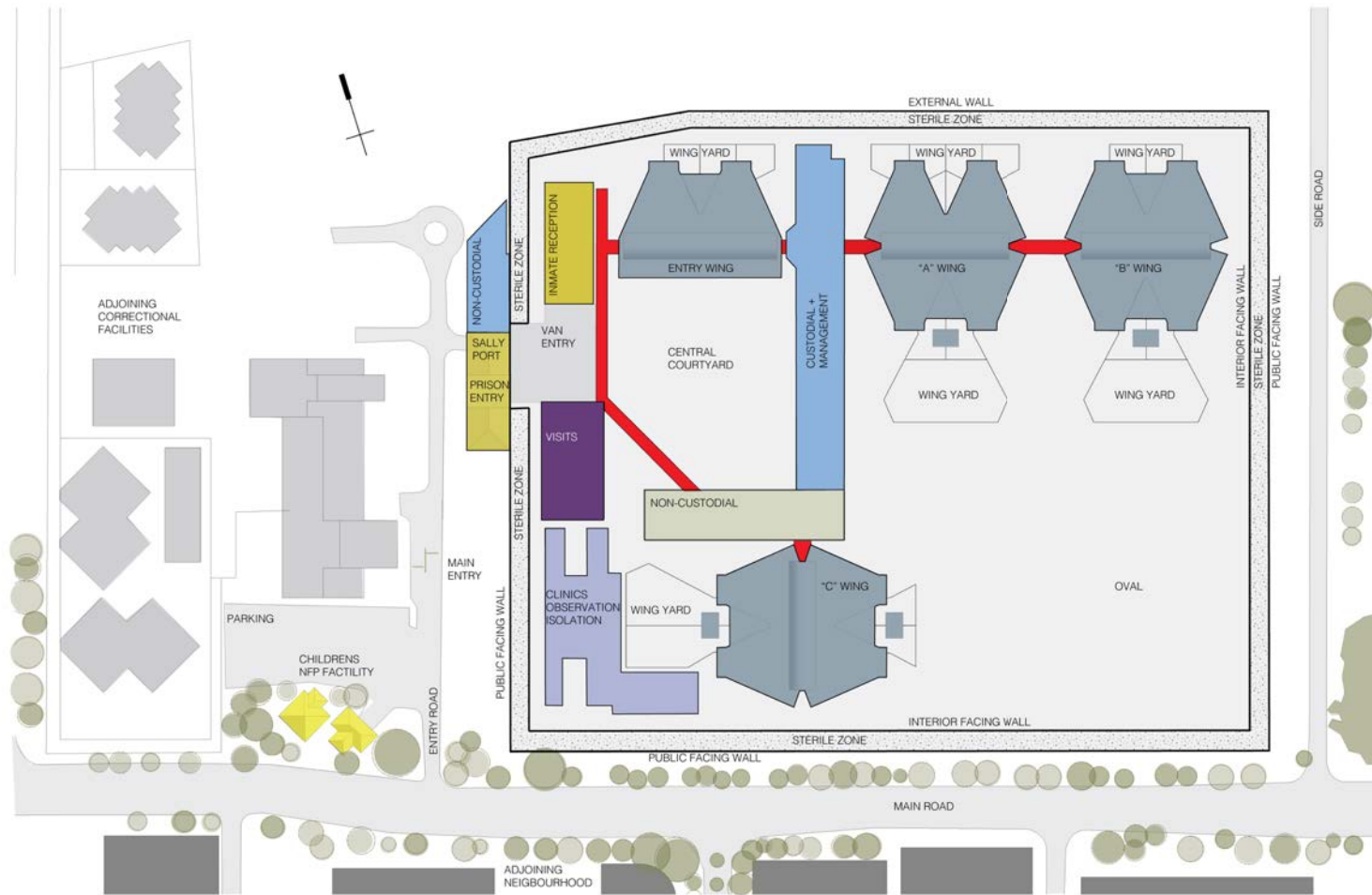


Entering the prison sketch.



Place + faith.
- connections.
APR 16
R.D.

Sketch - The thing you see when you enter the prison. Staff and prisoner.



Semi hypothetical site plan. Existing condition



Complete plan with all interventions from the study included.

Appendix E – Web Exhibition Pages

Access to the research exhibition page. Please note that the feedback page has been disabled and does not show now that the research period for comment has closed. <https://www.southhead.net/>

A sample of pages are included for reference.

THE AESTHETICS OF CITIZENSHIP

[Home](#) [Research](#) [Design](#) [Contact](#)

I acknowledge the Gadigal People of the Eora Nation and pay respect to the knowledge embedded forever within the Aboriginal Custodianship of Country as we share our own knowledge, learning, and research practices.

Hello,

My name is Kevin Bradley and I am an Architect and PhD student studying at the University of Technology, Sydney. A couple of years ago, I was working on a project for a learning centre in a prison for males in New South Wales. One of the aspirations of the client for the architecture was to help the prisoner students see themselves as citizens and assist them to keep in touch with their roles in the community outside. Since then, I have visited quite a few prisons for other projects and experienced prison design more broadly.

I often reflect back on that small learning centre project with its aspirations for connections with citizenship. I started to think about how a 'citizen-centered' focus could be taken as an approach to the design of prisons more generally and what would that look like. I decided to look at this through a PhD research project.

One of the more significant things that has come to light in this research project is the realisation that 'citizenship' is not a definable entity within, or held by any single individual. It is something that flows through us, and beyond via our relationships and associations - it is both held individually and shared at once. The sensing of citizenship ebbs from within the prison cell, out into the community and into our homes and places of gathering. The sensing of citizenship is also felt by the gaze of society's expectations of justice. These connections of citizenship and how they manifest as Architecture are the aspect of design I am interested in and what this research project seeks to contribute to the making of penal environments.

It is significant to note that the research and researcher holds a neutral position on matters of the role or need for prison environments. The primary interest is in the qualities of the built environment in how they hold symbolic meanings associated with being part or distanced from society. The theoretical base for this enquiry is Social Contract Theory articulated through interpretative methods.

I have engaged with a number of prisoners and staff within three prisons in NSW. I have also spoken with some other people that are connected to the design or administration of prisons, or have an advocacy role for current and former prisoners.

This research is a 'design-practice' type and, in part, involves taking what was said in the interviews and interpreting this into concept drawings. To do this, I needed to get an understanding of how the people I interviewed perceived what is appropriate as a look and feel of a prison in the context of citizenship and justice from the inside, and from the outside. The main research questions of the research are:

- What building style and amenity would facilitate and maintain the values and responsibilities of being a citizen?
- What building style and amenity would exhibit the civic qualities of just punishment?

As a guide to using this website - I recommend starting with the 'Research' page first to get a sense of what was captured in the interviews and then moving to the conceptual designs in the 'Design' tab. The 'Feedback' tab is the location where you can make any comments if you wish. Your feedback from this exhibition will be incorporated into the final thesis and designs.

Thank you for spending time with this research.



Research Fields of Concern

The research explored two areas of citizenship:

1. What a prison should look and feel like from within to maintain connection with the roles and responsibilities of being a functioning member of society, and
2. What a prison should look like when viewed from the outside if it was to have a civic role of protection and punishment.

When speaking with the prisoners, staff and external participants, there emerged a clear distinction between citizenship as it related to family relationships, and citizenship as a suite of symbols or meanings that could be interpreted from the interior and exterior architecture of the prison.

The meanings and symbols of the internal prison environment relating to operational safety is included in the research but is not a particular focus on this website as it is specific to technical design interventions (gates/chutes/sight lines etc) that are outside the intent of seeking feedback from the general community.

Family relationships were the social portal for most prisoners to the outside world. Connection with family was indicated by extension, connection with community. The qualities that could be experienced through this exchange was often seen as maintaining wellbeing on a day to day basis.

Concerns related to families

Prisoners, staff and external research participants recognised the interrelation of citizenship and family. Family roles and responsibilities were often spoken of in the same sense as that of the manner of the individual as citizen. Prisoners and staff were concerned about the effect of the prison environment on visiting family and relatives. Any effect on the family was felt by the prisoner. Concerns about family came from a number of directions:

- The likelihood of the family feeling that they share the guilt for the crime of the person they are visiting
- Visiting family members are likely to experience shame and fear in visiting prison
- The way visits operate with the fixed tables and chairs – not being able to move from them is not a natural setting for sitting for spending meaningful time with loved ones. It was also related to an erosion of dignity as people were forced to remain seated or leave.
- Lack of access to good food in some of the prisons did not lend itself to quality family connections. In some places, packaged snacks of low quality processed food was the only available
- Prisoners and staff were very concerned about the possibility of children finding the experience of visiting a parent in prison would become a normal thing for

“If we do the time – the family always does the time with us. They probably do more time and harder time than we do’ ”

— Prisoner

“ It can be very traumatic for a young child who doesn't get it. It's not big enough to understand what's happening...its traumatic”

— Staff

“I think most important to most inmates is having an ability to have a relatively normal interaction with their family and friends when they come to visit’ .”

— External Participant